

1 Studies of the decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp$ at
2 CLEO-c and LHCb



4 Tim Evans

5 St. Cross

6 University of Oxford

7 A thesis submitted for the degree of

8 *Doctor of Philosophy*

9 Trinity 2017



10 **Studies of the decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp$ at**
11 **CLEO-c and LHCb**

12 Tim Evans

13 St. Cross

14 University of Oxford

15 *A thesis submitted for the degree of*

16 *Doctor of Philosophy*

17 Trinity 2017

18 **Abstract**

19 This thesis describes two studies of the four-body decays of the neutral
20 charm meson, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and its doubly Cabibbo-suppressed counterpart
21 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$. The first analysis is a model-independent determination
22 of parameters that characterise the phase space averaged interference between
23 the two amplitudes associated with each of these decay modes. The analysis
24 exploits quantum correlations in $D\bar{D}$ pairs produced from the $\psi(3770)$ resonance
25 in data collected with the CLEO-c detector.

26 The second half of this thesis describes studies of the resonant structure of these
27 decay modes using proton-proton collision data corresponding to an integrated
28 luminosity of 3.0 fb^{-1} collected by the LHCb experiment. Studies of the favoured
29 mode, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, are the most precise studies of the amplitude to date
30 and this data set is one of the largest samples of any decay mode to be studied using
31 an amplitude analysis. The study of the suppressed mode, $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, is
32 the first study of resonance structure of this decay mode, and is also one of the few
33 existing studies of the sub-structure of a doubly Cabibbo-suppressed amplitude.
34 The largest contributions to both decay amplitudes are found to come from axial
35 resonances, with decay modes $D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^+ K^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1270/1400)^+ \pi^-$
36 being prominent in $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, respectively.

Abstract

38 This thesis describes two studies of the four-body decays of the neutral charm
 39 meson, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and its doubly Cabibbo-suppressed counterpart $D^0 \rightarrow$
 40 $K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$. The first analysis is a model-independent determination of parameters
 41 that characterise the phase space averaged interference between the two ampli-
 42 tudes associated with each of these decay modes. The analysis exploits quantum
 43 correlations in $D\bar{D}$ pairs produced from the $\psi(3770)$ resonance in data collected
 44 with the CLEO-c detector.

45 The second half of this thesis describes studies of the resonant structure of these
 46 decay modes using proton-proton collision data corresponding to an integrated
 47 luminosity of 3.0 fb^{-1} collected by the LHCb experiment. Studies of the favoured
 48 mode, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, are the most precise studies of the amplitude to date and
 49 this data set is one of the largest samples of any decay mode to be studied using
 50 an amplitude analysis. The study of the suppressed mode, $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, is
 51 the first study of resonance structure of this decay mode, and is also one of the
 52 few existing studies of the sub-structure of a doubly Cabibbo-suppressed amplitude.
 53 The largest contributions to both decay amplitudes are found to come from axial
 54 resonances, with decay modes $D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^+ K^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1270/1400)^+ \pi^-$
 55 being prominent in $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, respectively.

Contents

56

57	1 Introduction	1
58	2 Theoretical Background	5
59	2.1 Introduction to the Standard Model	6
60	2.2 CP violation	7
61	2.3 The CKM matrix	10
62	2.4 Determining γ with $B \rightarrow DK$ decays	11
63	2.5 The decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$	15
64	2.6 Light resonances	18
65	3 Determination of $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ coherence factor and associated	
66	hadronic parameters at CLEO-c	25
67	3.1 Quantum-correlated observables	26
68	3.2 The CLEO experiment	32
69	3.3 Yield determination	35
70	3.4 Measurement of observables	42
71	3.5 Interpretation	47
72	3.6 Conclusions	50
73	4 The LHCb detector	53
74	4.1 Vertex Locator	55
75	4.2 Tracking system	56

76	4.3	Particle identification	57
77	4.4	Calorimeters	58
78	4.5	Muon system	59
79	4.6	Trigger system	60
80	4.7	Offline	61
81	4.8	Simulation	62
82	5	Selection of $D^0 \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$ decays	63
83	5.1	Secondary charm decays and flavour tagging	64
84	5.2	Preselection	65
85	5.3	Offline selection	70
86	5.4	Peaking backgrounds	75
87	5.5	Yield extraction	79
88	5.6	Mixing correction	82
89	5.7	Phase-space acceptance	83
90	5.8	Summary	87
91	6	The Isobar Model	89
92	6.1	Two-body isobars	91
93	6.2	Covariant tensor formalism	99
94	6.3	Three-body isobars	105
95	6.4	Quasi model-independent formalism	108
96	6.5	Matrix elements	109
97	6.6	AmpGen framework	110
98	7	Amplitude analysis of $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$ decays	115
99	7.1	Fitting formalism	116

100	7.2	Dynamic binning	119
101	7.3	Model construction	120
102	7.4	List of decay chains	125
103	7.5	Systematic uncertainties	126
104	7.6	The RS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$	127
105	7.7	The WS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$	133
106	7.8	Coherence factor	140
107	8	Conclusions and outlook	143
108		Appendices	
109		Bibliography	151

1

110

111

Introduction

112 In 1947, Rochester and Butler observed signs of strangely long lived particles in
113 cosmic ray experiments [1]. These long lived particles had lifetimes comparable to
114 the π -meson, but with a mass roughly three times greater. The π -meson had been
115 predicted by Yukawa in 1935 as the mediator of the strong interaction [2] and had
116 also been discovered in 1947 in photographic emulsions [3]. Further study revealed
117 an entire family of particles with peculiar properties: they could be produced by
118 strong interactions but only in certain pairings, while given their long lifetimes it was
119 presumed that they could only decay via the weak interaction. These observations
120 led A. Pais and M. Gell-Mann to invent a new quantum number called *strangeness*,
121 which was conserved in strong but not in weak interactions. Together with the
122 isospin quantum number, introduced by W. Heisenberg and E. Wigner to explain
123 the properties of the nucleons, strangeness formed the basis of *flavour physics*.

124 The first great insight provided by studying the properties of these strange
125 particles was the solution of the so-called $\tau - \theta$ puzzle. Charged particles with
126 an identical mass and lifetime were observed decaying to both two pions, a state
127 that is symmetric under spatial inversion (parity), and to three pions, a state
128 that is anti-symmetric under spatial inversion. It had been believed that the
129 rules of the universe were entirely symmetric under spatial inversion, which would
130 forbid a particle decaying to states with differing parity. Hence, it was presumed
131 there were two particles, the τ and θ with differing parity but with otherwise
132 puzzlingly identical properties. A drastic resolution to this puzzle was proposed
133 by T.D. Lee and C.N. Yang in 1956: the τ and θ mesons are one and the same,

134 and the weak interaction was not symmetric under parity transformations [4].
135 This theory was experimentally confirmed by C.S. Wu in the same year by the
136 examination of the β -decay spectrum of polarised cobalt-60 [5]. The τ , θ are
137 therefore truly the same particle, and together with their electrically neutral brethren
138 became known as the kaons.

139 The decay rates of the different hadrons could be related by transformations
140 between isospin and strangeness. In 1961 Gell-Mann [6] and Zweig [7] noticed
141 that this could be explained by the hadrons being composed of combinations of
142 three fractionally charged particles, up, down and strange, that were collectively
143 named quarks. The quarks interact with each other via the strong-nuclear force,
144 which at low energies is sufficiently strong that the quarks can only exist in bound
145 states with other quarks. The integer spin mesons were identified as consisting of a
146 quark anti-quark pair, while the half-integer spin baryons were identified as bound
147 states of three quarks. Further possibilities, such as bound states of two quarks
148 and two anti-quarks (tetraquarks) and four quarks and an anti-quark (pentaquarks)
149 were also theorised. Examples of these exotic hadrons were only found relatively
150 recently, with the first tetraquark and pentaquark identified by the Belle [8] and
151 LHCb [9] collaborations, respectively.

152 Further great accomplishments in the flavour sector included the prediction
153 in 1970 of a fourth quark, charm, to explain the suppression of certain decays of
154 the neutral kaons by the Glashow-Iliopoulos-Maiani (GIM) mechanism [10]. The
155 charm quark was later discovered by B. Richter and S. Ting in 1974 in a bound
156 state with a charm anti-quark, named the J/ψ meson [11, 12]. Perhaps the most
157 surprising discovery however was the decay of the longer lived neutral kaon into
158 a pair of pions by J. Cronin and V. Fitch in 1964 [13], as such a process was
159 thought to be forbidden by the symmetry that relates matter to anti-matter, known
160 as CP -symmetry. The violation of this symmetry has profound implications for
161 particle physics and cosmology, and remains a central area of study in modern
162 flavour physics. The discovery of the violation of CP -symmetry led to the prediction
163 of two additional quarks by M. Kobayashi and T. Maskawa in 1973 [14]. This
164 extended the work of N. Cabibbo on the universality of weak interactions [15] to
165 include a third generation of quarks such that CP -symmetry could be violated.
166 Experimentally, the bottom quark was first found by L. Lederman in 1977 [16] with
167 the discovery of the Υ -meson, which consisted of a bound state of the bottom quark
168 and bottom anti-quark. The top quark was found in 1995 at the Tevatron by the

169 CDF and D0 collaborations [17, 18], which with a mass of about $170 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ is the
 170 heaviest known particle, and decays so rapidly that it does not form bound states.

171 Studies of flavour phenomena successfully predicted a state over 300 times
 172 heavier than the kaon itself, and thus the potential for such measurements to
 173 indirectly probe energy scales far higher than the masses of the involved particles
 174 cannot be overstated. One such area continues to be studies of CP -symmetry
 175 violation, with a multitude of measurements made to over-constrain and perhaps
 176 break the current description of this phenomenon. However, an understanding of
 177 these weak effects necessitates a description of the hadronic states in which the
 178 underlying quarks find themselves bound.

179 This thesis describes studies of two multi-body hadronic decays of the neutral
 180 charm meson, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ ¹ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, and is structured as
 181 follows. Chapter 2 gives a broad theoretical introduction, with discussions on the
 182 importance of CP -violation to particle physics and cosmology and the relevance
 183 of the two decays that are the subject of the thesis to studies of CP -violating
 184 phenomena. Chapter 3 describes an analysis performed using data from the CLEO-
 185 c experiment to provide a model-independent parametrisation of hadronic effects
 186 in the $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp$ system. The subject of the majority of this thesis is
 187 the development of models to describe these multi-body decays. These models
 188 are constructed using data from the LHCb experiment, which is introduced in
 189 Ch. 4, while Ch. 5 describes how clean samples of the two decays are obtained.
 190 Chapter 6 introduces a formalism for describing multi-body hadronic systems
 191 known as the isobar model, and in Ch. 7 models for these two decay modes
 192 are developed and discussed.

¹The inclusion of charge-conjugate processes is implied throughout, unless otherwise stated.

2

Theoretical Background

Contents

2.1	Introduction to the Standard Model	6
2.2	<i>CP</i> violation	7
2.3	The CKM matrix	10
2.4	Determining γ with $B \rightarrow DK$ decays	11
2.5	The decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$	15
2.6	Light resonances	18

The Standard Model (SM) of Particle Physics provides a remarkably simple description of the interactions between an elemental set of particles and three of the fundamental forces of nature. In Sect. 2.1, these elemental particles and the fundamental forces are introduced. These fundamental forces have symmetry properties under three discrete operators. The combined effect of two of these operators, charge-conjugation (C) and parity (P), is to convert matter states into anti-matter states and vice versa. Therefore, the violation of symmetries under the CP -operation (CP -violation) is closely related to the dominance of matter over anti-matter in the early universe. The discrete symmetries, and their role in cosmology is discussed in Sect. 2.2.

Section 2.3 introduces the CP -violation in the quark sector, and how it originates in the mixing between mass and flavour eigenstates. This is described by the Cabibbo–Kobayashi–Maskawa (CKM) matrix, with the CP -violating effects described by a single complex phase. Precision measurements of the CKM matrix

220 are therefore critical in understanding both the CP -violation within the Standard
 221 Model and searching for physics beyond it. The measurement of the unitarity
 222 angle γ , closely related to the CP -violating phase of the CKM matrix, is one of
 223 the key aims of modern flavour physics. Two methods for extracting this angle
 224 in the decays of B mesons are proposed by Gronau-London-Wyler (GLW) and
 225 Atwood-Dunietz-Soni (ADS). These are outlined in Sect. 2.4. The two decays
 226 of the neutral D -meson, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, that are the
 227 principal concern of this thesis, play an important role in the determination of
 228 γ , and will be briefly introduced in Sect. 2.5. These two decay modes will be
 229 referred to as $D \rightarrow K \pi \pi \pi$ collectively. An extended discussion on the formalism
 230 for describing these systems is deferred to Ch. 6. Finally, the intermediate resonant
 231 states that dominate multi-body processes such as those described in this thesis
 232 will be briefly described in Sect. 2.6.

233 2.1 Introduction to the Standard Model

234 The Standard Model of particle physics provides a description of the interactions
 235 of all known fundamental particles in terms of three interactions: electromagnetic,
 236 the weak force and the strong force. The particle content of the Standard Model
 237 can be divided into two categories. The fermions, particles with half-integer spin,
 238 can be categorised in three generations, which are essentially replicas of each other
 239 with higher masses. Within each generation, there are two quarks with fractional
 240 electrical charge that also interact under the strong nuclear force, and a pair of
 241 leptons, one electrically charged and the other neutral. All of the known fermions
 242 also interact with the weak force. For each of the fermions, there is also an anti-
 243 particle partner with the same mass but opposite charges. In addition to the
 244 fermions, the bosons are integer spin excitations of the fields that describe the
 245 fundamental interactions. The photon and gluons are massless, while the bosons
 246 associated with the weak interaction gain a mass dynamically by interacting with
 247 the final piece of the Standard Model, the Higgs field. The Higgs boson is the
 248 excitation of this field, and was the last remaining particle in the Standard Model to
 249 be discovered. The particle content of the Standard Model is summarised in Fig. 2.1.

$+\frac{2}{3}$ u up	$+\frac{2}{3}$ c charm	$+\frac{2}{3}$ t top	0 γ photon
$-\frac{1}{3}$ d down	$-\frac{1}{3}$ s strange	$-\frac{1}{3}$ b bottom	0 g gluon
-1 e electron	-1 μ muon	-1 τ tau	± 1 W^\pm weak charged
0 ν_e electron neutrino	0 ν_μ muon neutrino	0 ν_τ tau neutrino	0 Z^0 weak neutral
			0 H^0 Higgs

Figure 2.1: Particle content of the Standard Model, showing the three generations of fermions and gauge bosons, with the electrical charge of each of the particles inset.

2.2 CP violation

There are three discrete operators in the Standard Model that were long believed to be closely associated with the fundamental symmetries of nature. When applied to a single particle, these three operators are:

1. Charge-conjugation (C): Change the signs of all the additive quantum numbers of the particle. This includes the electrical charge, the quantum numbers related to both lepton and quark-flavour, and the baryon number. Charge-conjugation has the effect of transforming particles into their antiparticle partners.
2. Parity (P): Spatially inverts a particle, so a state described by (t, \mathbf{x}) is transformed to $(t, -\mathbf{x})$.
3. Time inversion (T): Reverses time such that (t, \mathbf{x}) is transformed to $(-t, \mathbf{x})$.

Any Lorentz-invariant quantum field theory should be symmetric under the combined operation CPT [19]. The eigenvalue associated with each operator is ± 1 , with the eigenstates therefore sometimes described as being even or odd under each operator. The electromagnetic and strong interactions are invariant under each operator individually. However, it is observed that C and P are not symmetries

267 of weak interactions: the weak charged currents couple exclusively to left-handed
 268 fermions and right-handed anti-fermions, and hence maximally violate C and P
 269 symmetries individually. The combined CP operation transforms a left-handed
 270 fermion into a right-handed anti-fermion, and hence it may be expected that the
 271 weak interaction is CP symmetric, but this also turns out not to be the case.

272 Although the Standard Model provides a relatively complete description of the
 273 observed universe, there are many reasons to expect that it is incomplete. One of
 274 the most compelling reasons to expect this is the relative excess of matter over
 275 anti-matter, specifically that an excess of baryons was produced at some point in
 276 the history of the early universe. There are three independent conditions for such
 277 an excess, known as the Sakharov conditions [20], which are:

- 278 1. Baryon number violation. All known perturbative processes in the SM result
 279 in equal numbers of baryons and anti-baryons. However, there are non-
 280 perturbative electroweak processes that can produce baryons without anti-
 281 baryons [21].
- 282 2. Violation of C and CP symmetries is required even if there were a process that
 283 could generate excess baryons, as otherwise an equal and opposing process
 284 would generate an excess of anti-baryons, and hence the net baryon number
 285 of the system would not increase.
- 286 3. Baryogenesis cannot occur at thermal equilibrium, otherwise the inverse of
 287 the baryogenesis process (a process that net annihilates baryogenesis) will
 288 occur at the same rate and a net asymmetry will not be generated.

289 Violation of CP symmetry in weak interactions is well established in the quark
 290 sector. The known CP violation in the quark sector is about 10 orders of magnitude
 291 too small to explain baryogenesis, and therefore it is likely that this additional
 292 CP -violation originates in physics beyond the Standard Model. Therefore, precise
 293 comparisons of CP -violating observables and the predictions from the Standard
 294 Model provide an invaluable probe of new physics.

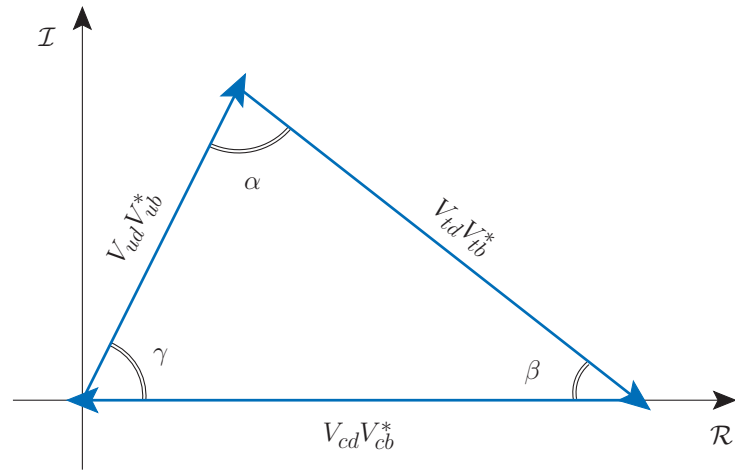


Figure 2.2: One of the unitarity triangles of the CKM matrix, showing the definition of angles α, β, γ .

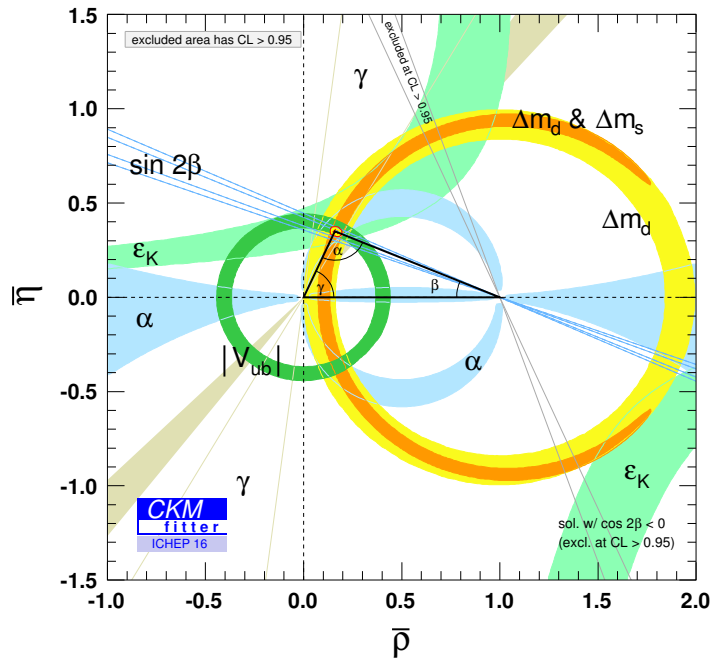


Figure 2.3: The unitarity triangle as determined by the CKMfitter collaboration, reproduced from Ref. [22]

2.3 The CKM matrix

The coupling between a particle and one of the fields is entirely prescribed by a universal coupling constant and the particle's charge with respect to that field. In the context of the weak interaction this is known as weak universality, and predicts that the coupling between the weak current and quarks should be identical between the different generations and also identical to the couplings to the different generations of leptons. This is not quite the case, as the quark mass eigenstates are not the same as the weak eigenstates. The Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa (CKM) matrix relates the weak eigenstates, (d', s', b') , with the mass eigenstates, (d, s, b) , and is written as:

$$\begin{pmatrix} d' \\ s' \\ b' \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} V_{ud} & V_{us} & V_{ub} \\ V_{cd} & V_{cs} & V_{cb} \\ V_{td} & V_{ts} & V_{tb} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} d \\ s \\ b \end{pmatrix}. \quad (2.1)$$

In the Standard Model, weak universality implies that the CKM matrix is unitary, conversely, if the CKM matrix is not unitary it implies physics beyond the Standard Model. Formally, the interaction Lagrangian between the weak charged current, W^+ and the quark spinor states (u_i, d_i) is

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{int}} \propto \sum_{ij} V_{ij} \bar{u}_i \gamma^\mu (1 - \gamma^5) d_j W_\mu^+, \quad (2.2)$$

where the sum is over the different quark states. The structure of this interaction is a coupling between the left-handed component of a quark field, and the spin-1 vector current of the electroweak interaction. The Lagrangian for the interaction between the anti-quarks and the weak charged current is given by the hermitian conjugate of \mathcal{L}_{int} . Therefore, if the elements of the CKM matrix are complex, there is the potential for CP violation in any process that is sensitive to the phase of a CKM matrix element. Applying the unitarity constraints allows the CKM matrix to be parametrised in terms of three mixing angles $(\theta_{12}, \theta_{23}, \theta_{13})$ and the KM phase δ , which describes the CP -violation:

$$V_{\text{CKM}} = \begin{pmatrix} c_{12}c_{13} & s_{12}c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta} \\ -s_{12}c_{23} - c_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{12}c_{23} - s_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & s_{23}c_{13} \\ s_{12}s_{23} - c_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & -c_{12}s_{23} - s_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{23}c_{13} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (2.3)$$

where $c_{ij}, s_{ij} = \cos(\theta_{ij}), \sin(\theta_{ij})$. Experimentally, it is found that the mixing between mass and weak eigenstates is relatively small in the the quark sector, therefore each of the mixing angles is small and the CKM matrix is approximately diagonal. Therefore, processes that involve off-diagonal elements of the CKM matrix, those

321 that change the generation of the quarks are *Cabibbo-suppressed* with respect to
 322 those on the diagonal, which are referred to as *Cabibbo-favoured*.

323 Unitarity gives a series of constraints between the different elements of the CKM
 324 matrix that can be tested experimentally. One such constraint is:

$$V_{ud}V_{ub}^* + V_{cd}V_{cb}^* + V_{td}V_{tb}^* = 0, \quad (2.4)$$

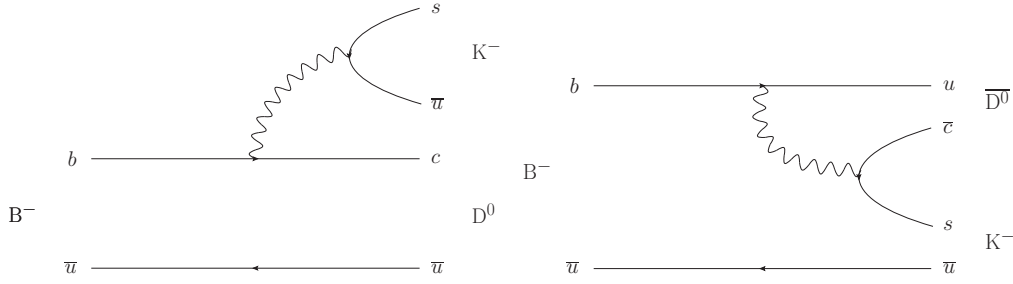
325 which in the complex plane has the form of a triangle. Figure 2.2 shows a diagram
 326 of this triangle, and shows the definition of the three unitarity angles α, β and
 327 γ . The unitarity triangle can be overconstrained by performing independent
 328 measurements that are sensitive to different combinations of CKM matrix elements.
 329 An unambiguous sign of new physics would be the CKM matrix not obeying the
 330 unitarity constraints, an example of which might be that the “triangle” turns out not
 331 to be closed, with $\alpha + \beta + \gamma \neq 180^\circ$. As the CKM matrix is intimately related to *CP*-
 332 violation, searches for new physics in this area are well motivated by the cosmological
 333 concerns discussed in the previous section. Figure 2.3 shows the complex plane
 334 of the unitarity constraint, with constraints on the different components of the
 335 unitarity triangle shown. The current world averages of three of the angles are:

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha &:= \arg(-V_{td}V_{tb}^*/V_{ud}V_{ub}^*) = (88.8_{-2.3}^{+2.3})^\circ \\ \beta &:= \arg(-V_{cd}V_{cb}^*/V_{td}V_{tb}^*) = (21.9_{-0.7}^{+0.7})^\circ \\ \gamma &:= \arg(-V_{ud}V_{ub}^*/V_{cd}V_{cb}^*) = (76.2_{-5.0}^{+4.7})^\circ, \end{aligned} \quad (2.5)$$

336 where the averages for angles β, γ are obtained by the Heavy Flavour Averaging
 337 Group (HFLAV) [23], and α by the CKM Fitter group [22]. Knowledge on α
 338 largely comes from studies of charmless decays of *B* mesons such as $B \rightarrow \pi\pi$
 339 and $\rho\rho$ [24, 22]. The time-dependent *CP*-asymmetry of $B \rightarrow J/\psi K^*$ decays gives
 340 very stringent constraints on the angle β [25, 26, 27]. The least well-known angle,
 341 γ , is measured in $b \rightarrow c$ and $b \rightarrow u$ transitions [28, 29, 30], with the strongest
 342 constraints coming from the studies of *CP* asymmetries in $B \rightarrow DK$ decays, which
 343 are discussed in the following section.

344 2.4 Determining γ with $B \rightarrow DK$ decays

345 Consider the process of a charged B-hadron (B^-) decaying to a neutral charm
 346 meson (D) and a charged kaon. Two contributions to this process are shown in

Figure 2.4: Diagrams for $B^\mp \rightarrow DK^\mp$ transitions

347 Fig. 2.4. As the two contributions produce D mesons of different flavours, D^0
 348 and \bar{D}^0 , their sum produces the superposition:

$$|D\rangle \propto |D^0\rangle + r'_B e^{i\delta_B} \frac{V_{ub}V_{cs}}{V_{cb}V_{us}} |\bar{D}^0\rangle, \quad (2.6)$$

349 where r'_B is the relative strong-amplitude and δ_B the CP -conserving strong-phase
 350 difference between the two diagrams. These parameters account for all QCD effects
 351 in the system, and must be determined experimentally. The combination of CKM
 352 matrix elements has the CP -violating weak-phase $-\gamma$, as CP -violating phases in
 353 the charm sector can be neglected. The magnitudes of the CKM matrix elements
 354 can be absorbed into the definition of r_B , leading to:

$$|D\rangle \propto |D^0\rangle + r_B e^{i(\delta_B - \gamma)} |\bar{D}^0\rangle. \quad (2.7)$$

355 A similar expression can be written for the CP -conjugate process $B^+ \rightarrow DK^+$:

$$|D\rangle \propto |\bar{D}^0\rangle + r_B e^{i(\delta_B + \gamma)} |D^0\rangle. \quad (2.8)$$

356 This suggests a strategy for measuring the phase γ . If the D decays to a final
 357 state that is accessible from both D^0 and \bar{D}^0 components of the wavefunction,
 358 the interference between these terms gives tree level access to γ . Consider a final
 359 state F of the D meson. The rates are¹:

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma(B^- \rightarrow D(F)K^-) &\propto |\langle F|D^0\rangle|^2 + r_B^2 |\langle F|\bar{D}^0\rangle|^2 + 2r_B \operatorname{Re} \left(e^{i(\delta_B - \gamma)} \langle F|D^0\rangle \langle \bar{D}^0|F\rangle \right) \\ \Gamma(B^+ \rightarrow D(F)K^+) &\propto |\langle F|\bar{D}^0\rangle|^2 + r_B^2 |\langle F|D^0\rangle|^2 + 2r_B \operatorname{Re} \left(e^{i(\delta_B + \gamma)} \langle F|\bar{D}^0\rangle \langle D^0|F\rangle \right). \end{aligned} \quad (2.9)$$

360 In principle, observables related to the two decay rates of Eq. 2.9 carry information
 361 on γ . In practice, decays involving many different choices of D -meson final states are
 362 used to provide constraints on γ . Two of the major classes of D decays considered

¹This section neglects charm mixing as the contributions are small and the discussion is not significantly altered by including these effects.

are discussed here. In the first, proposed by Gronau, London and Wyler (GLW) [31], F is chosen to be a CP eigenstate, such as $D \rightarrow K^+K^-$. In this case, $\langle F|D^0\rangle = \langle F|\bar{D}^0\rangle$, and Eq. 2.9 simplifies to:

$$\Gamma(B^\mp \rightarrow D(F_{CP})K^\mp) \propto 1 + r_B^2 + 2r_B \cos(\delta_B \mp \gamma). \quad (2.10)$$

The sensitivity is therefore controlled by r_B , which can be roughly estimated as:

$$r_B = \underbrace{\frac{0.0035 \times 0.97344}{0.0412 \times 0.22534}}_{\text{CKM}} \frac{1}{N_c} \approx 0.12, \quad (2.11)$$

↓
colour

where the first term comes from the relevant combination of CKM matrix elements, and the second term is a colour factor $\frac{1}{N_c}$ that suppresses the second diagram with respect to the first. Experimentally, r_B is measured to be [28]:

$$r_B = 0.1019 \pm 0.0056.$$

Therefore, GLW modes are suppressed or favoured by up to 20% depending on the value of δ_B and γ . In a second, alternative approach proposed by Atwood, Dunietz and Soni (ADS) [32], a non- CP eigenstate is studied, and D 's are reconstructed in both the F final state and the CP conjugate \bar{F} . The CP violation in the charm sector is small in the SM, and hence can be neglected and therefore the following relationships between amplitudes can be made

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{A}_F &:= \langle F|D^0\rangle = \langle \bar{F}|\bar{D}^0\rangle \\ \bar{\mathcal{A}}_F &:= \langle F|\bar{D}^0\rangle = \langle \bar{F}|D^0\rangle, \end{aligned} \quad (2.12)$$

and also the ratio of amplitudes $\mathcal{R}_F e^{-i\delta_F} = \mathcal{A}_F/\bar{\mathcal{A}}_F$ can be defined. The phase δ_F represents the relative strong-phase difference between the F final state and its CP -conjugate. The four rates can be written in terms of these parameters as

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma(B^- \rightarrow D(F)K^-) &\propto \mathcal{R}_F^2 + r_B^2 + 2r_B \mathcal{R}_F \cos(\delta_B - \gamma - \delta_F) \\ \Gamma(B^- \rightarrow D(\bar{F})K^-) &\propto 1 + r_B^2 \mathcal{R}_F^2 + 2r_B \bar{\mathcal{R}}_F \cos(\delta_B - \gamma + \delta_F) \\ \Gamma(B^+ \rightarrow D(F)K^+) &\propto 1 + r_B^2 \mathcal{R}_F^2 + 2r_B \mathcal{R}_F \cos(\delta_B + \gamma + \delta_F) \\ \Gamma(B^+ \rightarrow D(\bar{F})K^+) &\propto \mathcal{R}_F^2 + r_B^2 + 2r_B \bar{\mathcal{R}}_F \cos(\delta_B + \gamma - \delta_F). \end{aligned} \quad (2.13)$$

Consider the case where F is a doubly Cabibbo-suppressed process. For example, $F = K^+\pi^-$. In this case, the ratio of amplitudes is roughly $\left| \frac{V_{us}V_{cd}}{V_{cs}V_{ud}} \right| = 0.05$. The

381 contributions to the opposite sign observables, $\Gamma(B^\mp \rightarrow D(K^\pm \pi^\mp)K^\mp)$, are all of
 382 a similar order, and hence large asymmetries can be generated.

383 This formalism can be generalised to multi-body final states of the D meson [33].
 384 The amplitudes \mathcal{A}_F and $\bar{\mathcal{A}}_F$ are then functions of position (\mathbf{x}) in the phase space
 385 of the multi-body system. The phase space can be averaged over by introducing
 386 the coherence factor, R_F , and average relative strong phase, δ_F :

$$R_F e^{-i\delta_F} = \langle \mathcal{A}_F \bar{\mathcal{A}}_F^* \rangle = \frac{\int d\mathbf{x} \mathcal{A}_F(\mathbf{x}) \bar{\mathcal{A}}_F^*(\mathbf{x})}{A_F A_{\bar{F}}}, \quad (2.14)$$

387 where $A_F / A_{\bar{F}}$ are the phase-space averaged amplitudes, given by

$$A_F^2 = \int d\mathbf{x} |\mathcal{A}_F(\mathbf{x})|^2. \quad (2.15)$$

388 It is also useful to define the ratio of phase-space averaged amplitudes, $r_F = A_F/A_{\bar{F}}$.
 389 Collectively, these parameters are referred to as the hadronic and coherence
 390 parameters of the D decay. The coherence factor lies between 0 and 1, depending
 391 on the differences between the amplitude and its CP conjugate. A high coherence
 392 factor implies there is a roughly constant strong-phase difference between the
 393 amplitudes, whereas averaging over large variations in strong-phase differences
 394 will result in a lower coherence factor. The integrated decay rate can be written
 395 in terms of these parameters as

$$\Gamma(B^\mp \rightarrow DK^\mp) \propto r_F^2 + r_B^2 + 2r_B r_F R_F \cos(\delta_B \mp \gamma - \delta_F). \quad (2.16)$$

396 The coherence factor dilutes the interference term, and hence the sensitivity to γ .
 397 A small coherence factor results in sub-optimal sensitivity to γ , as a wide range of
 398 strong-phase differences are averaged over. It is therefore useful to consider small
 399 regions of phase space in which the variation in the difference in strong phases
 400 is smaller between the two amplitudes. This allows the measurement to exploit
 401 knowledge of these local phase differences in order to improve sensitivity. In partic-
 402 ular, these smaller regions of phase space will have differing values of the average
 403 strong-phase difference, δ_F , which is extremely powerful in reducing ambiguities
 404 due to the trigonometric dependence of decay rates on the unitarity angle γ .

405 The expressions discussed in this section have a dependence on many nuisance
 406 parameters as well as the weak phase γ . Those from the decay of the B -meson, r_B
 407 and δ_B , can be overconstrained by combining measurements from many different
 408 decays of the D meson. This can be seen in Fig. 2.5, which shows the profile
 409 likelihood in the two-dimensional plane of γ vs. r_B [30]. There are other nuisance
 410 parameters that are specific to the decays of the D meson, r_F , R_F and δ_F and hence
 411 require external inputs. Central to this thesis is the measurement and modelling
 412 of these for one multi-body decay of the D meson, $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$.

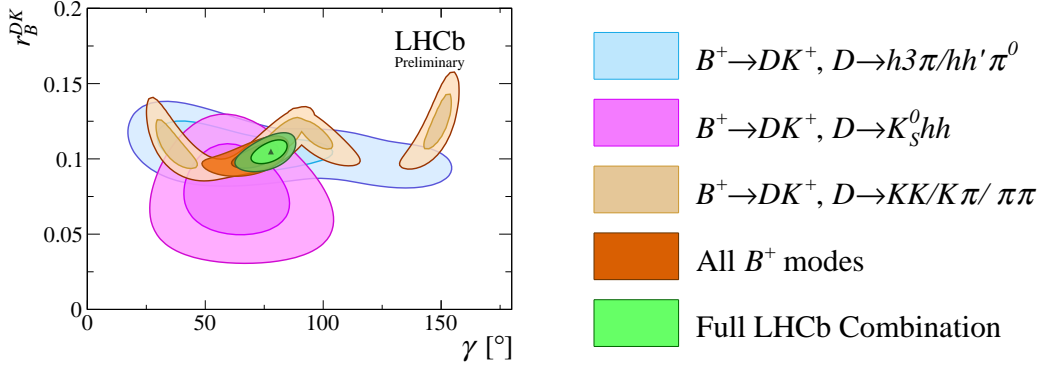


Figure 2.5: Likelihood contours for γ vs. r_B , showing the contributions from $B \rightarrow DK$ decays, split by the different D -meson final states. The dark and light regions indicate 68.3% and 95.5% confidence levels respectively. Reproduced from Ref. [30].

413 2.5 The decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$

414 The decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ have an important role to
 415 play in improving knowledge of the unitarity angle γ . The approach to such an
 416 analysis so far has considered the D -meson phase space inclusively. As discussed in
 417 Sect. 2.4, further sensitivity can be gained by exploiting variations in the behaviour
 418 of observables across the phase space of the D -decay. The inclusive approach has
 419 also been taken to studies of charm mixing in these decays, which can also benefit
 420 from an understanding of how the amplitudes vary locally across the four-body
 421 phase space. The decay modes are also a rich laboratory for examining the behaviour
 422 of the strong interaction at low energy, through studies of the make-up and nature
 423 of the intermediate resonances that contribute to the final states.

424 These considerations motivate the construction of models that describe the
 425 quantum mechanical amplitude associated with each decay as a function of position
 426 in the phase-space of the final state particles. Such a study is known as an
 427 *amplitude analysis*. This section will give a broad overview of the two decay
 428 modes, with an extended discussion on the formalism for describing the amplitude
 429 deferred until Ch. 6.

430 The main diagrams at the level of weak transitions that contribute to $D^0 \rightarrow$
 431 $K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp$ decays are shown in Fig. 2.6. The transitions relevant for $D^0 \rightarrow$
 432 $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ decays are shown in Fig. 2.6(a) (b), with the latter diagram colour
 433 favoured with respect to the former, and hence should play a more important role in
 434 determining the total amplitude. As these diagrams involve the favoured transitions
 435 of the weak currents, those within the same generation, the decay $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$

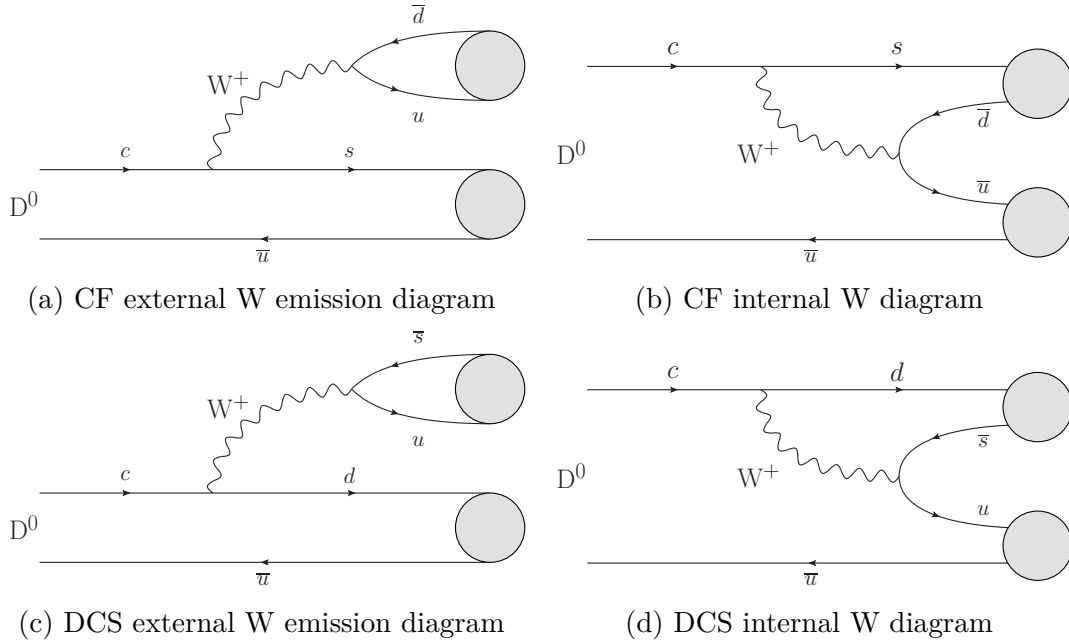


Figure 2.6: Weak-level diagrams for charm to strange and charm to anti-strange transitions

436 is referred to as Cabibbo-favoured (CF). The weak-level diagrams that contribute
 437 to $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ decays are shown in Fig. 2.6(c) 2.6(d). Both processes involve
 438 two off-diagonal elements of the CKM matrix, which are significantly suppressed
 439 compared to the charged weak currents with coupling amongst the same generation,
 440 and therefore are described as doubly Cabibbo-suppressed (DCS). The ratio of rates
 441 of the doubly-Cabibbo suppressed process to the favoured process is roughly

$$\frac{|V_{cd}V_{us}|^2}{|V_{cs}V_{ud}|^2} \approx 3 \times 10^{-3}. \quad (2.17)$$

442 A smaller contribution to $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ decays comes from charm mixing.
 443 During the lifetime of the D^0 -meson, there is an amplitude associated with it
 444 oscillating into a \bar{D}^0 meson. The \bar{D}^0 meson can access the $K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ final state via
 445 the Cabibbo-favoured transition. The total amplitude will therefore always contain
 446 a mixing component. However, this will typically be a sub-dominant contribution
 447 to the total amplitude as mixing only plays a small role in the charm sector. The
 448 mixing contribution will therefore be neglected unless explicitly discussed.

449 Multi-body processes will typically occur via a sequence of intermediate resonant
 450 states. For example, the $s\bar{d}$ quark state in Fig. 2.6(b) may hadronise to an excited
 451 state of the kaon, the K^{*0} meson, while the $u\bar{u}$ quark state may become an excited
 452 state of the pion, the ρ^0 meson. The four-body final state is then produced

453 by the rapid decay of these resonances into pions and kaons. In this example,
454 the decay chain is²

$$D^0 \rightarrow \overline{K}^{*0} \rho^0.$$

$$\left. \begin{array}{l} \phantom{D^0 \rightarrow \overline{K}^{*0} \rho^0.} \\ \phantom{D^0 \rightarrow \overline{K}^{*0} \rho^0.} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^- \\ \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \end{array}$$

455 The DCS decay has a contribution from the $D^0 \rightarrow K^{*0}[K^+\pi^-]\rho^0[\pi^+\pi^-]$ decay chain,
456 the weak diagram for which is shown in Fig. 2.6(d). Due to the similarity of the two
457 internal W diagrams, it may be expected that the relative contributions from these
458 neutral resonances to the final state produced via this topology may be comparable
459 between CF and DCS amplitudes. The similarity can be contrasted with the
460 diagrams involving an external W emission which are shown in Fig. 2.6(a)/ 2.6(c).
461 The $u\bar{d}/s\bar{u}$ state can produce a quasi-stable meson, a charged pion and kaon in the
462 CF and DCS cases respectively, while the other state must decay to three bodies in
463 order to make up the charged four-body final state. An example decay chain is

$$D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^+ K^-,$$

$$\left. \right\} \rightarrow \rho^0 \pi^+ \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^- \pi^+$$

464 where the $a_1(1260)$ -meson has been produced by the charged-weak current. In
465 the DCS case, the charged weak current produces a $u\bar{s}$ quark state, and hence
466 will produce a kaon or a kaon resonance. Therefore, it may be expected that
467 the charged kaon-like and charged pion-like resonances will have interchanged
468 roles in CF and DCS amplitudes.

469 The many possible configurations of the final state must be considered in
470 describing a multi-body system. Consider a final state involving N on mass-shell
471 spinless particles. This system has a phase space with $3N$ degrees of freedom.
472 Three degrees of freedom can be removed by an arbitrary boost. A further three
473 degrees of freedom can be removed via an arbitrary rotation, on the condition
474 that the total decay process is rotationally invariant. This property holds for a
475 spinless particle decaying to N spinless particles, but not in generality if either the

²It is useful to have a compact notation for these decay chains. The convention adopted in this thesis is for square brackets to indicate the decay products of a given resonance, so the above example is written as

$$D^0 \rightarrow \overline{K}^{*0} [K^- \pi^+] \rho^0 [\pi^+ \pi^-]$$

476 initial or final state particles have intrinsic spin. One further degree of freedom
 477 is then removed by requiring that the parent is also on-shell. The dimensionality
 478 of the N body phase-space is therefore:

$$d = 3N - 6 - 1. \quad (2.18)$$

479 The best known examples of multi-body systems are the three body decays. In
 480 this case, there are two degrees of freedom. The phase-space density is constant
 481 when describing the space in terms of a pair of invariant masses, leading to the
 482 well known Dalitz plot. Four-body final states have five degrees of freedom, and
 483 the phase-space density is not flat in any choice of coordinates.

484 2.6 Light resonances

485 The multi-body processes that are described in the latter half of this thesis are
 486 expected to have dominant contributions from intermediate resonant states. These
 487 intermediate hadronic resonances rapidly decay to combinations of the quasi-
 488 stable ground state hadrons. For the decays considered in this thesis, there are
 489 contributions from the relatively light resonances containing u, d, s -quarks. These
 490 resonances have isospin $0, 1/2, 1$, with $I = 0$ and $I = 1$ resonances sometimes
 491 referred to as isoscalars and isovectors respectively. Figures 2.7 and 2.8 show
 492 the mass spectrum and spin-parity of the $I = 1, I = 1/2$ systems up to about
 493 $2 \text{ GeV}/c^2$. A quasi-classical description of the meson is of a bound state of a
 494 quark (q) and an anti-quark (\bar{q}). The physical meson states will generally be
 495 superpositions of quark states that have the same quantum numbers. This section
 496 gives a brief introduction to this description, with a focus on those resonances
 497 which are potentially relevant to $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decays.

498 The spectrum of meson excitations can be described by the relativistic quark
 499 model of Godfrey and Isgur [35]. This model considers the degrees of freedom
 500 of a bound state of a fermion anti-fermion pair:

- 501 1. The spins of the fermions can either be aligned or anti-aligned, hence there is
 502 a quantum number associated with the total spin S , that takes values $0, 1$.
- 503 2. The two fermions can also have relative orbital angular momentum $L = 0, 1, 2, \dots$,
 504 which can be partially inferred by measuring the intrinsic parity of the
 505 resonance, which is related to the orbital angular momentum via $P = (-1)^{L+1}$.

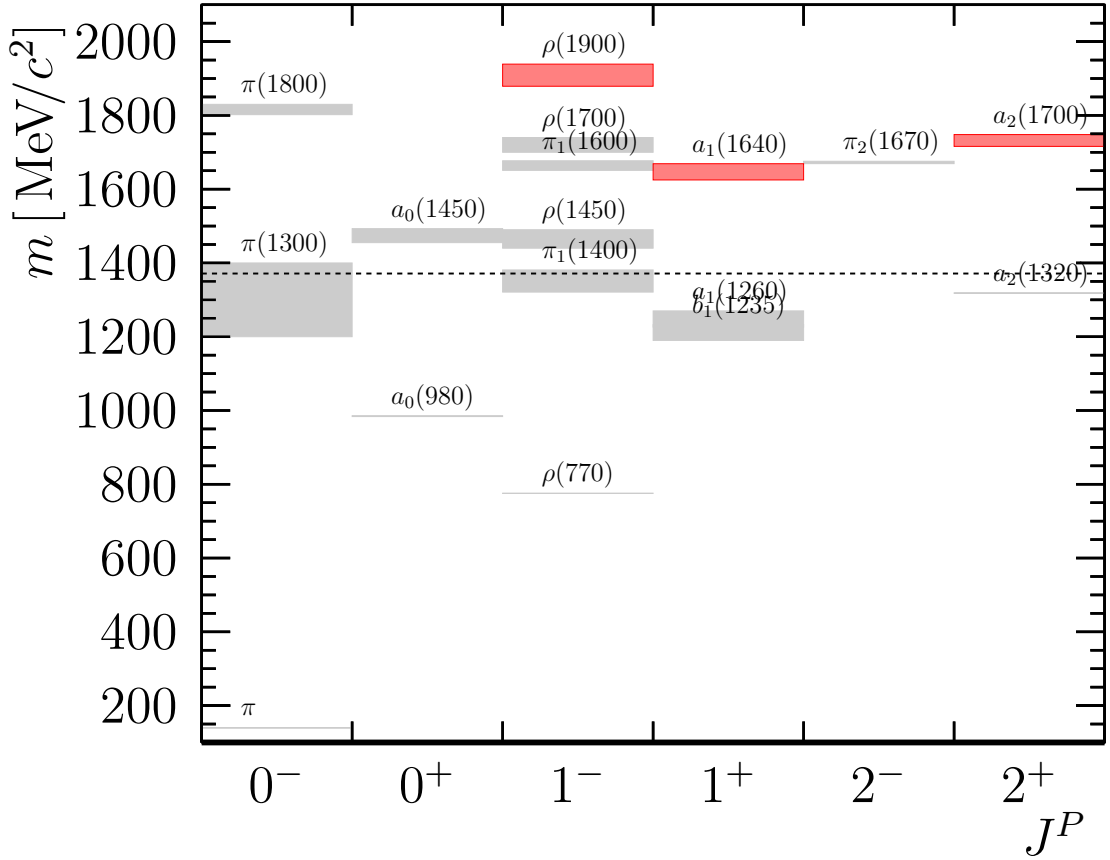


Figure 2.7: The low mass spectrum of the $I = 1$ system up to the tensors. The dashed line shows the maximum energy of the three pion system in $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decays. Bands show the uncertainties on masses from Ref. [34].

- 506 3. The spin and orbital angular momentum combine to form the total angular
507 momentum J , which can take values from $|L - S|$ to $L + S$. Of the quantum-
508 numbers pertaining to the spin-orbit configuration of the two quarks, only
509 the total angular momentum can be directly observed.
- 510 4. The two fermions can also be radially excited, which is denoted by the quantum
511 number N . A radial excitation is distinguished from states with the same
512 spin-orbit configuration by being of higher mass. The radially excited mesons
513 are also often referred to as the radial recurrences of a given state.

514 In spectroscopic notation, these quantum numbers are written as

$$N^{2S+1}L_J.$$

515 The lowest energy configuration of the $q\bar{q}$ system therefore has $J = L = S = 0$,
516 and hence has odd parity and is thus referred to as a pseudo-scalar, or 1^1S_0 in

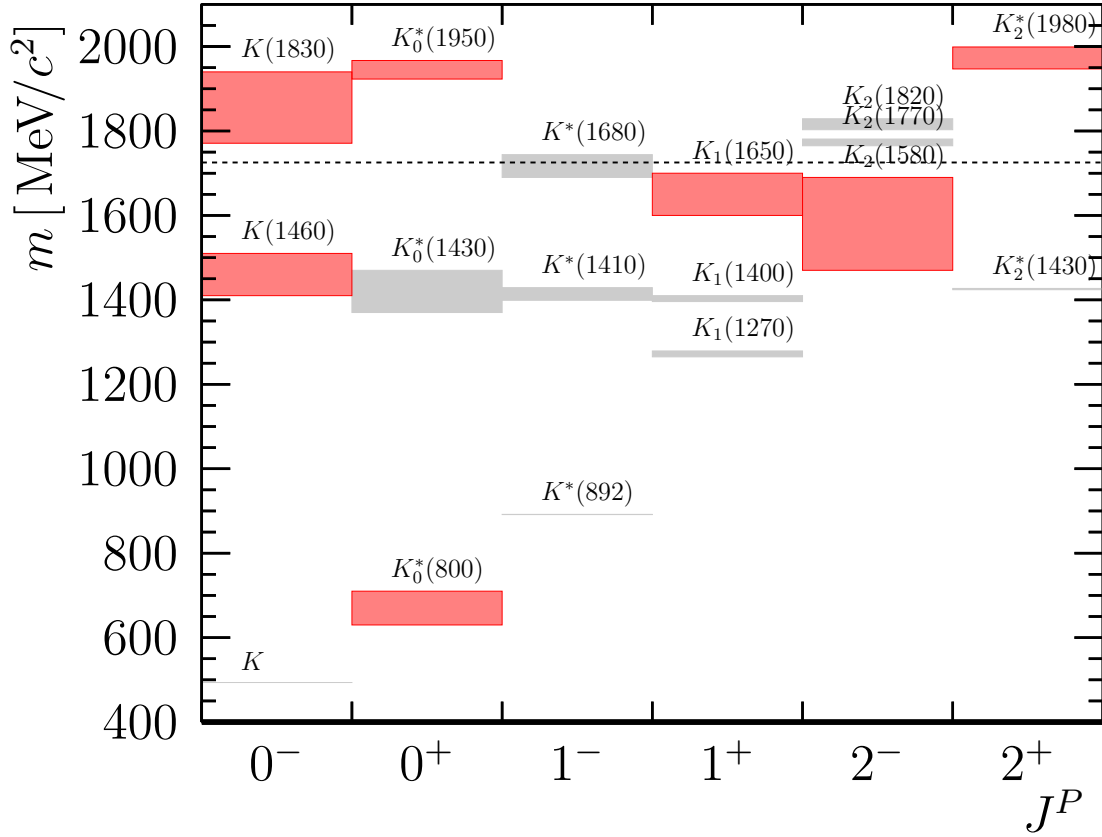


Figure 2.8: The low mass spectrum of the $I = 1/2$ system up to the tensors. The dashed line shows the maximum energy of the $K\pi\pi$ system in $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decays. Bands show the uncertainties on the masses of resonances from Ref. [34], with red boxes indicating resonances that are not well established.

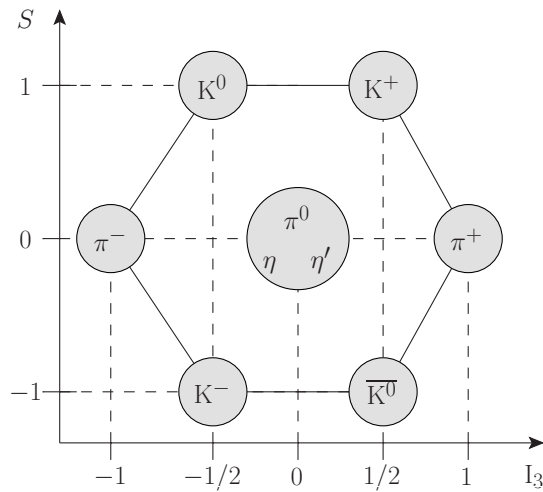


Figure 2.9: The ground state pseudo-scalar mesons with the associated strangeness and isospin quantum numbers.

517 spectroscopic notation. As this is the ground state of the diquark, these mesons are
 518 the quasi-stable particles, such as the lowest mass pions and kaons. The ground
 519 states with their isospin and strangeness quantum numbers are shown in Fig. 2.9.

520 $\mathbf{S} = \mathbf{1}, \mathbf{L} = \mathbf{0}$

521 The meson excitations that are best understood are those associated with
 522 aligning the spins of the two fermions, but with the other quantum numbers as in
 523 their ground states, or 1^3S_1 in spectroscopic notation. As such, these states form an
 524 excited multiplet that has $J = 1$ and are parity odd, and therefore are known as the
 525 vector mesons. These are also sometimes referred to as being states of *natural* parity.
 526 Well-known resonances such as the $\rho(770)$ and $K^*(892)$ populate this multiplet,
 527 and have been extensively studied with precision measurements of masses, widths
 528 and couplings. These lowest energy vector resonances will occasionally be referred
 529 to without explicitly stating their masses, so $\rho(770) \rightarrow \rho$ and $K^*(892) \rightarrow K^*$.

530 $\mathbf{L} = \mathbf{1}$

531 If the two fermions have the lowest excitation of orbital angular momentum,
 532 $L = 1$, they must also have +1 intrinsic parity. It might be expected that the lowest
 533 mass parity-even states should therefore be 1^1P_1 , and be an axial vector (1^+) state;
 534 contrasting with the vector mesons, these are sometimes referred to as being of
 535 *unnatural* parity. The axial vector mesons can be distinguished from the vector
 536 mesons by considering the minimum number of quasi-stable decay products. From
 537 the requirement to simultaneously conserve angular momentum and parity in the
 538 strong decays, the axial vector mesons must decay to a minimum of three final-state
 539 particles, while the vector mesons have a minimum of two final-state particles. The
 540 axial vectors therefore do not play a role in describing the usual three-body Dalitz
 541 plots, as these only involve resonances that can decay to two final-state particles.
 542 The axial vectors are also not produced in the $2 \rightarrow 2$ scattering processes that
 543 provide input for the understanding of the natural parity states. The majority of the
 544 information about these resonances has therefore historically come from studies of
 545 diffractive processes such as $\pi p \rightarrow p\pi\pi\pi$. The axial resonances play a critical role in
 546 describing the amplitudes associated with the four-body processes described in the
 547 latter half of this thesis, and hence these final states provide an excellent laboratory
 548 for studying these resonant states that are usually experimentally difficult to access.

549 The association between the quark states and the physical mesons is more
 550 complicated for the axial-vector resonances than for the vector resonances, as the

551 1^3P_1 quark states also manifest themselves as axial-vectors, and thus the quark
 552 state associated with a meson cannot be uniquely identified using only spin parity.
 553 This relationship can sometimes be inferred from how the different states act under
 554 charge-conjugation, or C -parity. The associated eigenvalue, λ_C , is a good quantum
 555 number for the quark and meson states that are electrically neutral and do not carry
 556 strangeness, with the eigenvalue given by $\lambda_C = (-1)^{L+S}$ under these conditions. As
 557 C -parity is a conserved quantity in strong interactions, additional information on
 558 the quark states of a decaying meson can be inferred from its decay channels. It
 559 is useful to generalise the C -parity to states that carry electrical charge: \mathcal{G} -parity
 560 is defined such that the different states within an isospin multiplet have the same
 561 \mathcal{G} -parity as each other, and equal to the C -parity of the state within the multiplet
 562 for which this is a good quantum number. For example, the isovector ground-state
 563 multiplet consists of (π^+, π^0, π^-) , in which the π^0 -meson has a well defined C -parity
 564 with eigenvalue $\lambda_C = +1$, and thus the multiplet has $\lambda_{\mathcal{G}} = +1$. Considerations
 565 of \mathcal{G} -parity are thus equivalent to considerations of C -parity on the electrically
 566 neutral member of an isospin multiplet, and then applying isospin symmetry to the
 567 result to describe its electrically charged partners. The quantum numbers of the
 568 1^+ isovectors, the $b_1(1235)$ and the $a_1(1260)$, can be inferred using \mathcal{G} -parity. The
 569 $a_1(1260)$ decays predominately to $\rho\pi$, a state with odd \mathcal{G} -parity, implying $a_1(1260)$
 570 has odd \mathcal{G} parity, and hence immediately may be identified as the 1^3P_1 quark state.
 571 The $b_1(1235)$ decays predominately to $\omega\pi$ ($\lambda_{\mathcal{G}} = +1$) and hence is inferred to have
 572 even \mathcal{G} -parity, and therefore is identified with the 1^1P_1 quark state.

573 In contrast to the axial isovector states, the 1^1P_1 and 1^3P_1 excitations of the kaon
 574 do not have well-defined \mathcal{G} -parity as the electrically neutral members of the multiplets
 575 do not have well-defined C -parity. Therefore, there is no quantum number that
 576 distinguishes the states and thus they can mix to produce the physical meson states,
 577 the $K_1(1270)$ and $K_1(1400)$. The mixing can be parametrised in terms of a mixing
 578 angle θ_K , with the mass eigenstates written in terms of the quark eigenstates as

$$\begin{aligned} |K_1(1400)\rangle &= \cos(\theta_K)|^3P_1\rangle - \sin(\theta_K)|^1P_1\rangle \\ |K_1(1270)\rangle &= \sin(\theta_K)|^3P_1\rangle + \cos(\theta_K)|^1P_1\rangle. \end{aligned} \tag{2.19}$$

579 This mixing turns out to be almost maximal, with $\theta_K = \left(33_{-2}^{+6}\right)^\circ$ reported by
 580 Ref. [36], and has important consequences for both four-body charm decays
 581 discussed in this thesis.

582 There are two other possible spin-orbit configurations of a quark state with
 583 $L = 1, S = 1$. The first are the (0^+) scalar states, which have an anti-aligned spin

584 and orbit. These states minimally decay to two particles and can be produced in
 585 $2 \rightarrow 2$ scattering processes. For both $I = 0$ and $I = 1/2$ scalar sectors, unique
 586 identification of the resonant content of each system is made difficult by resonances
 587 with large widths and significant non-resonant scattering amplitudes that also
 588 contribute to all final states with the same quantum numbers. The first scalar
 589 excitation of the pion, the $a_0(980)$, is forbidden from decaying to two (or three)
 590 pions by \mathcal{G} -parity conservation, and therefore does not play a role in describing
 591 $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ decays. Four-body decays do not provide particularly useful
 592 additional insight into the scalar sector, as these resonances can also be produced
 593 in scattering experiments and play a role in three-body amplitude analyses. In
 594 particular, three-body decays will often have a unique production mechanism for
 595 a given scalar state, which is a significant advantage compared to the multiple
 596 production mechanisms that are present in the four-body decays.

597 The other configuration of $L = 1, S = 1$ has the spin-orbits aligned, and hence
 598 these states are (2^+) tensors. As these states have natural parity they can be
 599 studied in both scattering processes and three-body decays, and therefore are
 600 relatively well understood, with examples of states with this spin-parity including
 601 the isoscalar excitation $f_2(1270)$ and the kaon excitation $K_2^*(1430)$. The tensor
 602 resonances play a relatively minor role in $D \rightarrow K \pi \pi \pi$ decays due to the relatively
 603 small phase-space available.

604 $\mathbf{N = 2, L = 0, S = 0}$

605 The excitations of exclusively the radial quantum number are written as $2^1 S_0$
 606 in spectroscopic notation. They have the same spin-orbit configuration as the
 607 ground state and manifest as pseudo-scalar (0^-) resonances with higher masses
 608 than the ground state particles. The strong decays of these resonances have a
 609 minimal three-body final state due to the requirement of conserving parity in strong
 610 decays, and therefore have some of the same experimental difficulties as the axial
 611 vectors. Evidence for resonances with these quantum numbers historically comes
 612 from diffractive processes such as $\pi^- p \rightarrow p \pi \pi \pi^-$, which established the $\pi(1300)$ -
 613 meson and identified it as the first radial excitation of the pion [37]. Despite being
 614 well-established, the mass, width and couplings of this state are not well known.
 615 The diffractive process $K^- p \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^- p$ also shows some evidence for a radial
 616 excitation of the kaon, the $K(1460)$ [38, 39]. This resonance requires experimental
 617 confirmation as it has not yet been observed to be produced by mechanisms other
 618 than the original diffractive process. Four-body decays can also produce these

619 resonances, via a different mechanism to the diffractive process, and hence can
620 provide useful additional knowledge.

621 There are also resonances that have multiple quantum numbers excited. The
622 best understood examples of these are the radial excitations of the vector states,
623 the 2^1P_1 resonances. These have the same quantum-numbers as the vector ground
624 state, but have larger masses and much broader widths. Examples of these include
625 the $\rho(1450)$ and $K^*(1410)$ for the $\rho(770)$ and $K^*(892)$. These states are more
626 complicated than the vector ground states, as they typically have enough energy
627 available to decay to multiple final states. For example, the $K^*(1410)$ -meson has
628 been observed decaying to both $K\pi$ and $K\pi\pi$ final states. As these resonances
629 are at higher masses, it may be expected that they should play only a minor role
630 in the relatively low-energy regime of $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decays.

3

631

632

633

634

Determination of $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ coherence factor and associated hadronic parameters at CLEO-c

635

Contents

636

637

638

639

640

641

642

643

644

645

646

647

648

649

650

651

652

653

654

655

656

657

3.1	Quantum-correlated observables	26
3.1.1	CP eigenstates	28
3.1.2	Flavour specific tags	29
3.1.3	$K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$	30
3.2	The CLEO experiment	32
3.2.1	The Cornell Electron Storage Ring	32
3.2.2	The CLEO-c detector	32
3.2.3	Data samples	34
3.2.4	Simulation	35
3.3	Yield determination	35
3.3.1	Selection	35
3.3.2	Background subtraction	37
3.3.3	Yield results	40
3.4	Measurement of observables	42
3.4.1	Normalisation	42
3.4.2	Systematic uncertainties	44
3.4.3	Results	45
3.5	Interpretation	47
3.5.1	Constraints from charm mixing	48
3.5.2	Combined fit	50
3.6	Conclusions	50

658

660

661 As outlined in Sect. 2.4, knowledge of the variations in the amplitude and
 662 phase differences between Cabibbo favoured and suppressed amplitudes for the
 663 process $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ is essential for extracting the unitarity angle γ in $B \rightarrow DK$
 664 decays. By averaging over the entire four body phase-space, the dependence can
 665 be expressed in terms of a set of parameters that can be measured experimentally.
 666 The definitions of these parameters, and their relevance to $B \rightarrow DK$ transitions
 667 have been outlined in the previous chapter. This chapter describes a measurement
 668 of these parameters, exploiting quantum-correlations in the decays of the $\psi(3770)$
 669 resonance. Section 3.1 introduces the observables at this resonance that can be
 670 used to constrain the hadronic parameters of charm decays. The analysis presented
 671 in this chapter exploits the copious production of the $\psi(3770)$ resonance at the
 672 Cornell Electron Storage Ring (CESR), the decays of which were measured by
 673 the CLEO-c experiment. These are briefly described in Sect. 3.2. Section 3.3
 674 describes the extraction of various yields from the CLEO-c data-set, with the
 675 construction of the quantum-correlated observables from these yields discussed in
 676 Sect. 3.4.1. The methods for selecting candidates, the determination of various
 677 sources of background contamination and normalisation of the yields are based
 678 on previous analyses of this channel [40, 41], with the analysis presented in this
 679 thesis improving on these previous studies by the inclusion of additional final states
 680 and utilising an updated simulation to improve estimates of various sources of
 681 background. The constraints from these observables are combined with additional
 682 constraints from a charm mixing study performed by the LHCb collaboration
 683 [42] to provide a global fit to the coherence factor and the associated hadronic
 684 parameters. This is described in Sect. 3.5.

685 The analysis described in this Chapter was published in Ref. [43].

686 3.1 Quantum-correlated observables

687 The hadronic parameters essentially depend on the interference between Cabibbo
 688 favoured and suppressed amplitudes, and as such can be accessed experimentally
 689 in processes where both amplitudes contribute in a known way. Generically, this
 690 involves studying the decays of a D -meson that is in a known superposition of the
 691 flavour eigenstates. One such system is neutral charm mesons that are produced
 692 via $c\bar{c}$ resonances such as the $\psi(3770)$, as the decays of these resonances result in

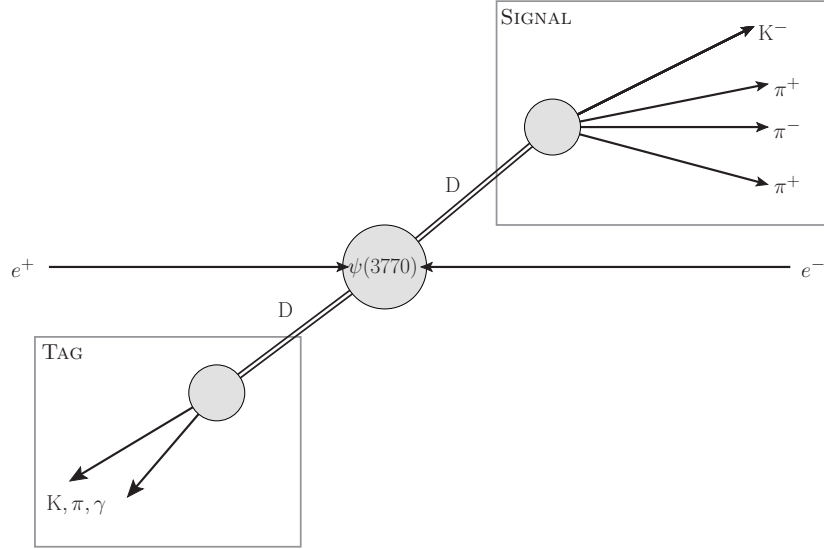


Figure 3.1: Schematic of the double-tag reconstruction of $e^+e^- \rightarrow \psi(3770) \rightarrow D\bar{D}$. The signal side of the decay is typically $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, while a variety of tags are reconstructed.

693 mesons that are quantum-mechanically entangled. Information about the flavour
 694 wavefunction can therefore be inferred by reconstructing both D -mesons. This is
 695 shown schematically in Fig. 3.1 for a $\psi(3770)$ -resonance produced via an electron-
 696 positron collision. The *signal* side of the decay in the current analysis will typically
 697 be $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, but the following discussion will generally refer to it as F as it is
 698 often useful to reconstruct other signal decays as a normalisation channel. The *tag*
 699 side of the decay is reconstructed in a variety of final states, generically referred
 700 to as G , and provides a probe of the wavefunction of the signal decay. This is
 701 referred to as the *double-tag* method, as both neutral charm mesons from the decay
 702 of the $\psi(3770)$ resonance are reconstructed.

703 In order to determine how the inclusive rate of a given double-tag, $\Gamma(F|G)$,
 704 depends on the hadronic parameters of the $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ system, the wave function
 705 that describes the entangled $D\bar{D}$ system must first be considered. As the $\psi(3770)$
 706 resonance is a $J^{PC} = 1^{--}$ state, the wavefunction that describes the two D -mesons
 707 must be odd under charge conjugation. This implies that the entangled state of
 708 the D -mesons can be described by the anti-symmetric wavefunction:

$$|\psi\rangle = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \left(|D^0\rangle |\bar{D}^0\rangle - |\bar{D}^0\rangle |D^0\rangle \right). \quad (3.1)$$

709 This immediately gives an expression for the double-tag rate in terms of the
 710 coherence factors and associated hadronic parameters that are defined in Eq. 2.14.
 711 In terms of these parameters, the rate is given by

$$\Gamma_{FG} = |\langle FG|\psi\rangle|^2 = \Gamma_0 A_F^2 A_G^2 \left(r_F^2 + r_G^2 - 2R_F R_G r_F r_G \cos(\delta_G - \delta_F) \right), \quad (3.2)$$

Table 3.1: D -meson final-states considered in this analysis.

Type	Final state
Flavour specific	$K^- \pi^+, K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-, K^- \pi^+ \pi^0$
CP even	$K^- K^+, \pi^- \pi^+, K_S^0 \pi^0 \pi^0, K_L^0 \pi^0, K_L^0 \omega, \pi^+ \pi^- \pi^0$
CP odd	$K_S^0 \pi^0, K_S^0 \omega, K_S^0 \phi, K_S^0 \eta, K_S^0 \eta'$
Self conjugate	$K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$

712 where Γ_0 is an overall normalisation that is independent of the tags considered.
713 The parameters (r, δ, R) are the average amplitude ratio, average strong phase
714 difference and coherence factor for each decay mode, and are defined in Eq. 2.14. It
715 is more straightforward to construct the ratio of the measured yield to the expected
716 yield under the no quantum-correlations hypothesis for most of the tags considered.
717 These are referred to as the ρ set of observables, and can be written as:

$$\rho_G^F = 1 - \frac{2R_F R_G r_F r_G \cos(\delta_G - \delta_F)}{r_F^2 + r_G^2}, \quad (3.3)$$

718 which by definition are unity in the absence of quantum-correlations ($R_F, R_G = 0$).

719 The double-tag decay rates are largely free of mixing effects due to the quantum
720 entanglement of the two D mesons. However, mixing plays a non-negligible role
721 in determining the ρ -observables as the expected rate in the absence of quantum-
722 correlations is affected by charm mixing, and as such Eq. 3.3 is inexact. Full
723 expressions for the observables including mixing effects can be found in Ref. [40].
724 These corrections are used in the final determination of the hadronic parameters, but
725 do not significantly alter the discussion and hence are neglected in the following text.

726 For the remainder of this section, the various different classes of double tags
727 that are reconstructed and their dependence on the coherence factor and associated
728 hadronic parameters will be discussed. A complete list of the final states that
729 are reconstructed is given in Table 3.1.

730 3.1.1 CP eigenstates

731 Consider reconstruction of a CP eigenstate such as $D^0 \rightarrow K^- K^+$ or $D^0 \rightarrow K_L^0 \pi^0$
732 as the tag G . The coherence factor and ratio of average amplitudes for the CP
733 eigenstate are 1, and the average strong-phase difference is 0 or 180° depending on
734 whether the state is CP even or odd. Therefore, the ρ observable is

$$\rho_{CP}^F = 1 - \lambda \frac{2R_F r_F \cos(\delta_F)}{1 + r_F^2}, \quad (3.4)$$

735 where λ is the CP eigenvalue of the tag. The rate is maximally altered when the
 736 coherence is 1 and there is no strong-phase difference. In this case, the double tag
 737 rates are altered by $\approx \mp 2r_F$ due to quantum correlations. The amplitude ratio r_F
 738 is of a doubly Cabibbo-suppressed process to a Cabibbo-favoured process. Hence
 739 r_F is approximately given by $\tan^2(\theta_c) \approx 0.05$, and the rates can be altered by up to
 740 $\approx 10\%$ by quantum correlations. It is useful to also define the CP -even observable

$$\Delta_{CP}^F = \lambda (\rho_{CP}^F - 1), \quad (3.5)$$

741 which allows the CP -even and CP -odd tags to be combined. In addition to the
 742 decays that are either CP -even or CP -odd, the decay $D \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^- \pi^0$ has both a
 743 dominant CP -even contribution and a small contamination from CP -odd amplitudes.
 744 For a general state that includes CP -even fraction F_+^G and CP -odd fraction F_-^G ,
 745 the ρ observable can be written as

$$\rho_{CP}^F = 1 - (F_+^G - F_-^G) \frac{2R_F r_F \cos(\delta_F)}{1 + r_F^2}. \quad (3.6)$$

746 3.1.2 Flavour specific tags

747 Three flavour specific double-tags are considered, $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, $K^- \pi^+$ and $K^- \pi^+ \pi^0$.
 748 For each double-tag, the charged kaons can either have the same or opposite charges.
 749 Therefore, there is a *like-sign* double-tag, which in general has high sensitivity to
 750 quantum correlations, and an *opposite-sign* double-tag which has very low sensitivity,
 751 and therefore provides a useful normalisation channel. The tags considered are:

- 752 1. $K\pi\pi\pi$ vs $K\pi\pi\pi$. In this case, the like-sign ρ observable is given by

$$\rho_{K3\pi} = 1 - R_{K3\pi}^2, \quad (3.7)$$

753 and hence quantum correlations can have a large effect on the rate when the
 754 two decay modes have high coherence. The opposite-sign ρ -observable is

$$\rho_{K3\pi}^{OS} = 1 - \frac{2r_{K3\pi}^2}{1 + r_{K3\pi}^4} R_{K3\pi}^2 \cos(2\delta_{K3\pi}). \quad (3.8)$$

755 Therefore, as $r_{K3\pi}^2 \approx 3 \times 10^{-3}$, quantum correlations have a negligible effect
 756 on the opposite sign yield. This is generally true of the opposite sign yields,
 757 and hence they can be used for normalisation purposes.

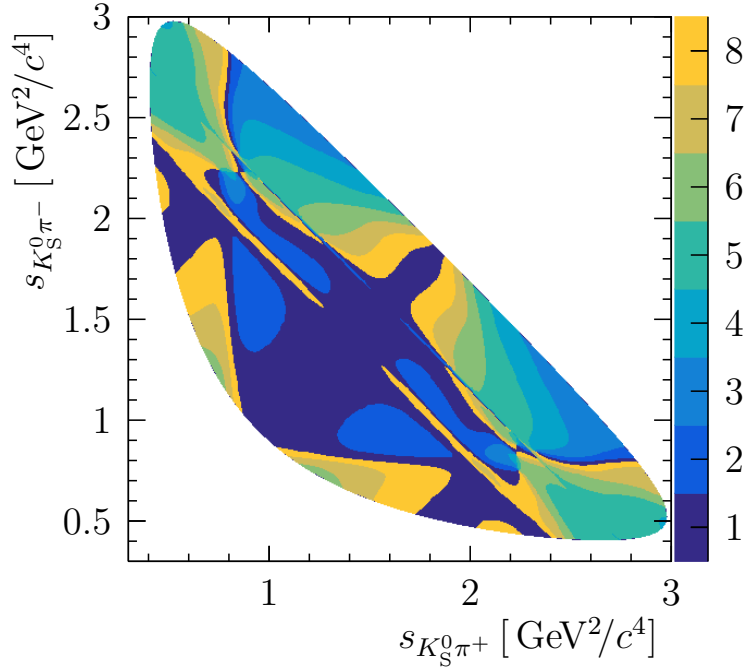


Figure 3.2: Equal average strong-phase difference binning for $D^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ decays, reproduced from Ref. [45]. The colour scale indicates the absolute bin number as a function $s_{K_S^0 \pi^+} : s_{K_S^0 \pi^-}$ of the invariant mass-squared combinations of the K_S^0 meson with each charged pion.

758 2. $K\pi\pi\pi$ vs $K\pi$. The like-sign ρ observables are given by:

$$\rho_{K\pi} = 1 - \frac{2r_{K3\pi}r_{K\pi}R_{K3\pi}\cos(\delta_{K3\pi} - \delta_{K\pi})}{r_{K\pi}^2 + r_{K3\pi}^2}, \quad (3.9)$$

759 where the hadronic parameters for the $D \rightarrow K\pi$ decay can be taken from
760 charm mixing measurements and dedicated quantum-correlated studies [44].

761 3. $K\pi\pi\pi$ vs $K\pi\pi^0$. The like-sign ρ observable is given by

$$\rho_{K\pi\pi^0} = 1 - 2\frac{r_{K3\pi}r_{K\pi\pi^0}}{r_{K3\pi}^2 + r_{K\pi\pi^0}^2}R_{K3\pi}R_{K\pi\pi^0}\cos(\delta_{K3\pi} - \delta_{K\pi\pi^0}). \quad (3.10)$$

762 In the current analysis the coherence factor and average relative strong-phase
763 difference of the $K\pi\pi^0$ final state are determined simultaneously with those
764 for the $K\pi\pi\pi$ state, taking the double-tag yields for $K\pi\pi^0$ vs CP , $K\pi$ and
765 $K_S^0\pi\pi$ tags from Ref. [41] to provide constraints on these parameters.

766 3.1.3 $K_S^0\pi^+\pi^-$

767 The decay $D \rightarrow K_S^0\pi^+\pi^-$ has been extensively studied due to its important role
768 in determining the unitarity angle γ , in particular both model-dependent and

independent studies have been performed of the amplitude and strong phase differences between $D^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ amplitudes across the Dalitz plot [46, 45]. This local knowledge makes this a very useful tag mode, as the double-tag yields can be examined as a function of position in the $D \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi \pi$ phase space. In practice, the double-tag yields are studied in bins of the $D \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi \pi$ phase space. The binning scheme is inspired by the amplitude model for this mode developed by the BaBar collaboration in Ref. [46], and follows the scheme in Ref. [45] to give 16 bins of equal strong-phase differences between $D^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ amplitudes. A binned method is used as a model independent determination of the hadronic properties of the $D \rightarrow K_S^0 \pi \pi$ decay from Ref. [45] can then be used.

As this is a three-body decay, the amplitude can be described in terms of a pair of coordinates, the invariant mass-squared combinations $s_+ = s_{K_S^0 \pi^+}$ and $s_- = s_{K_S^0 \pi^-}$ by convention. The amplitude is related to its CP -conjugate via,

$$\mathcal{A}_{D^0}(s_+, s_-) = \mathcal{A}_{\bar{D}^0}(s_-, s_+), \quad (3.11)$$

and therefore the average strong-phase differences and binning are anti-symmetric about the $s^+ = s^-$ plane. The binning is shown in Fig. 3.2 by the Dalitz-plot of $s_+ : s_-$, where the entry at each position is the absolute bin-number. By convention, bins above the $s_+ = s_-$ plane are given negative bin numbers, while those below positive. The total rate for the D^0 decay in the i th bin is therefore equal to the rate into the $-i$ th bin in the \bar{D}^0 decay, and hence this decay mode is sometimes referred to as *self conjugate*. The average strong-phase differences in each bin are parametrised using the c_i, s_i parameters, defined by:

$$c_i - i s_i = \left(\sqrt{K_i K_{-i}} \right)^{-1} \int_i d\mathbf{x} \mathcal{A}_{D^0} \mathcal{A}_{\bar{D}^0}^*, \quad (3.12)$$

where the phase-space integral is over the i th bin, and K_i is the amplitude integrated over this bin. The c_i, s_i parameters can be considered as the amplitude-weighted averages of the cosine and sine of the average strong-phase difference between the two amplitudes, while the K_i parameter is the fractional yield of flavour-specific decays into the i th bin. The expected double-tag yield in the i th bin can then be expressed in terms of these parameters and the hadronic parameters of the $D \rightarrow K \pi \pi \pi$ system as

$$Y_i = H_{K3\pi} \left(K_i + \left(r^{K3\pi} \right)^2 K_{-i} - 2r^{K3\pi} \sqrt{K_i K_{-i}} R_{K3\pi} (c_i \cos(\delta_{K3\pi}) - s_i \sin(\delta_{K3\pi})) \right), \quad (3.13)$$

where $H_{K3\pi}$ is an overall normalisation constant.

3.2 The CLEO experiment

The CLEO-c detector was the final stage of the CLEO detector on the Cornell Electron Storage Ring (CESR) accelerator in New York. The CLEO experiment ran for almost thirty years between 1979 and 2008, with the CLEO-c detector taking data between 2003 and 2008. In the earlier years of the experiment, the accelerator ran at a centre-of-mass energy at and around the Υ -resonances to produce B mesons. The final phase of the experiment was focused on charm physics, producing charm mesons from the $c\bar{c}$ resonances. The analysis presented in this thesis exploits the data taken at the $\psi(3770)$ -resonance, which is closest to the open-charm threshold and produces charm-meson pairs in a quantum-mechanically entangled state. This section gives a very brief introduction to CESR and CLEO, with Ref. [47] providing a detailed description of these systems.

3.2.1 The Cornell Electron Storage Ring

The Cornell Electron Storage Ring (CESR) was an electron-positron accelerator in Ithaca, New York, consisting of three systems. Electrons and positrons were accelerated from a linear accelerator to an inner 10 GeV synchrotron. This then fed the electron storage ring, which provided electron-positron collisions with a centre-of-mass energy between 3 and 10 GeV at the CLEO-c detector. During CLEO-c operations, the centre-of-mass energy of collisions was reduced in the synchrotron using wiggler magnets. Electron-positron collisions at a centre-of-mass energy of about 4 GeV result in copious production of the charmonium resonances, which can then be exploited to make measurements of the quantum-correlated observables discussed in the previous section.

3.2.2 The CLEO-c detector

The CLEO-c detector was designed to be close to hermetic, with a coverage up to about 20° from the beam line. A schematic diagram showing the different sub-systems of the detector is shown in Fig. 3.3. The CLEO-c tracking system consisted of a pair of cylindrical drift chambers inside a 1T magnetic field parallel to the beam direction, provided by a superconducting solenoid magnet. The inner drift chamber replaced the silicon vertex detector of CLEO-III, and was instrumented from about $4 \rightarrow 12$ cm with a gas wire detector. The outer gas drift chamber covered

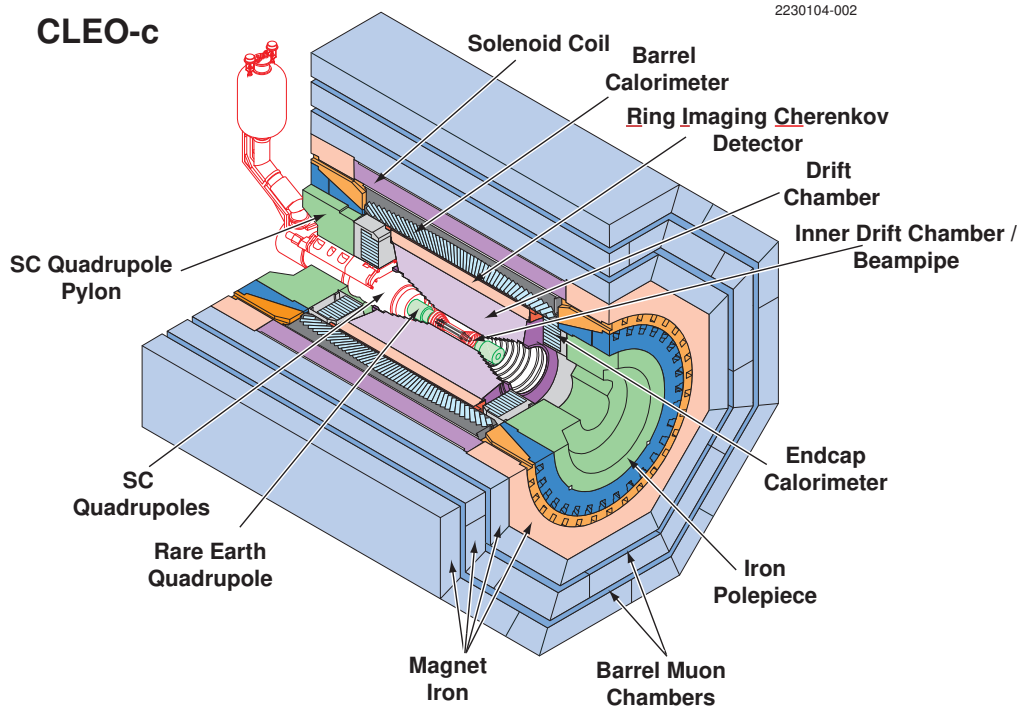


Figure 3.3: Schematic of the CLEO-c detector.

828 from about 12 \rightarrow 82 cm radially from the interaction point. Each drift chamber
 829 consisted of about 1 cm square cells with an instrumented inner wire at a potential
 830 of 2.1kV with respect to eight outer wires. As charm mesons are produced with
 831 low momentum due to the relatively low Q -value of $\psi(3770)$ decays, the D -meson
 832 decay vertices cannot typically be resolved using the vertex detector. A source of
 833 background is therefore due to events where the tracks from the two D mesons are
 834 swapped. The vertex system however provides powerful discrimination between
 835 K_S^0 mesons, from which a secondary vertex can normally be identified, and pion
 836 pairs directly produced by the decay of a D meson.

837 Charged particle identification was provided by several different sub-detectors.
 838 Firstly, the drift chambers provide some measurement of the ionisation per unit
 839 length of a track. This can be used to infer its velocity via the Bethe-Bloch
 840 formula. This provided good separation between kaons and pions up to about
 841 0.6 GeV/ c . Above this energy, separation was provided by a Ring Imaging Cherenkov
 842 (RICH) detector, positioned outside of the tracking system, which achieved excellent
 843 separation of different charged particle species at higher energies. Separation
 844 of kaons and pions is critical for identifying different charge combinations of
 845 $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decays.

Table 3.2: Summary of the CLEO-c data samples taken at the $\psi(3770)$ resonance with the integrated luminosity of each of the data sets.

Dataset	Integrated luminosity [pb^{-1}]
31	19.1
32	30.5
33	6.2
35	47.7
36	68.6
37	109.3
43	116.6
44	174.0
45	108.2
46	137.1
Total	818.3

846 Measurement of the energy of electromagnetic showers was provided by a Crystal
847 Calorimeter (CC). The calorimeter consisted of 7,800 caesium iodide scintillating
848 crystals. For the analysis presented in this chapter, several tags rely on the
849 reconstruction of π^0 and η mesons. The resultant photons from the decays of these
850 mesons are reconstructed by clustering the energy deposits in adjacent cells of the
851 calorimeter. A key variable in identifying the electromagnetic shower from a photon
852 is the ratio of the total energy in the 3×3 cells around the central cell of a cluster to
853 the energy deposited in the 5×5 cells about a cluster, which is known as the E9/E25
854 variable. An electromagnetic shower is considered to be well identified as coming
855 from a photon if 99% of the energy of the shower is deposited in the inner 9 cells.

856 3.2.3 Data samples

857 The analysis described in this thesis exploits the full CLEO-c data sample taken
858 at $\sqrt{s} = 3.770 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ with a total integrated luminosity of $818.3 \pm 8 \text{ pb}^{-1}$. This
859 consists of six samples taken between the years 2003 and 2005, and a second larger
860 set of four samples taken between 2006 and 2007. The production cross-section of the
861 $\psi(3770)$ resonance at this energy is about 6.3 nb [48]. Approximately 50% of $\psi(3770)$
862 resonances decay to pairs of neutral charm mesons, and hence about five million
863 $D^0 \bar{D}^0$ pairs were produced. The data samples used are summarised in Table. 3.2.

864 3.2.4 Simulation

865 There are two different types of simulation used in the following analysis. Specific
866 samples are generated with only certain decays of interest. These are used to
867 compute the efficiencies of some double-tags, and in some cases to make corrections
868 to the yields. Large samples are also generated using all known production and decay
869 channels in order to assess contributions from peaking backgrounds. Both types
870 of sample are generated and processed in the same way, with the underlying e^+e^-
871 interaction and decays of resultant particles handled by the EvtGen package [49].
872 The interaction between these decay products and the detector is then simulated
873 using the GEANT3 package [50]. The simulated events are then digitised and passed
874 through the same analysis chain as real data.

875 3.3 Yield determination

876 This section describes the determination of the yields of the different doubly-
877 tagged final states introduced in Sect. 3.1, with a complete list of these final
878 states given in Table 3.1. The selection requirements on these different final states
879 are discussed, followed by the method for estimating the residual contamination
880 from various sources of background. Finally, the yields for the different double-
881 tags are given in Sect. 3.3.3.

882 3.3.1 Selection

883 The D -meson candidates that are then combined in a double tag are centrally
884 reconstructed according to a common set of selection criteria. Additional selection
885 criteria are applied to the two D -meson candidates that constitute the double-
886 tag, and are as follows:

- 887 • Mode specific requirements are placed on the energy difference, ΔE , the
888 difference between the total energy of the particles composing the D candidate
889 and the energy of each beam. The window applied in this variable depends
890 on the energy resolution of the mode required, so modes that have neutral
891 particles will generally require a broader window than those only including
892 charged tracks. Examples of this are shown in Fig. 3.4, which compares the
893 distributions for the tags $K\pi\pi\pi$ and $K_S^0\pi^0\pi^0$. The ΔE requirements for each
894 of the decay modes considered are detailed in Table 3.3.

Table 3.3: Criteria on the energy difference, ΔE , for the different fully reconstructed tags

	ΔE [MeV]	
	Min.	Max.
$K\pi\pi\pi$	-20.0	20.0
$K\pi$	-29.4	29.4
KK	-20.0	20.0
$\pi\pi$	-30.0	30.0
$K_S^0\pi^0$	-71.0	45.0
$K_S^0\eta$	-55.0	35.0
$K_S^0\phi$	-18.0	18.0
$K_S^0\omega$	-25.0	25.0
$K_S^0\pi^0\pi^0$	-55.0	45.0
$K_S^0\eta'$	-30.0	20.0
$\pi\pi\pi^0$	-58.3	35.0

Table 3.4: Criteria on the invariant mass of intermediate particle candidates, and the final states used to reconstruct these particles.

	Final state	Mass [MeV/ c^2]	
		Min.	Max.
K_S^0	$\pi^+\pi^-$	490.1	505.1
ω	$\pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$	762.0	802.0
η	$\gamma\gamma$	506.0	590.0
η	$\pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$	506.0	590.0
ϕ	K^-K^+	1009.0	1033.0
η'	$\eta\pi^+\pi^-$	950.0	964.0

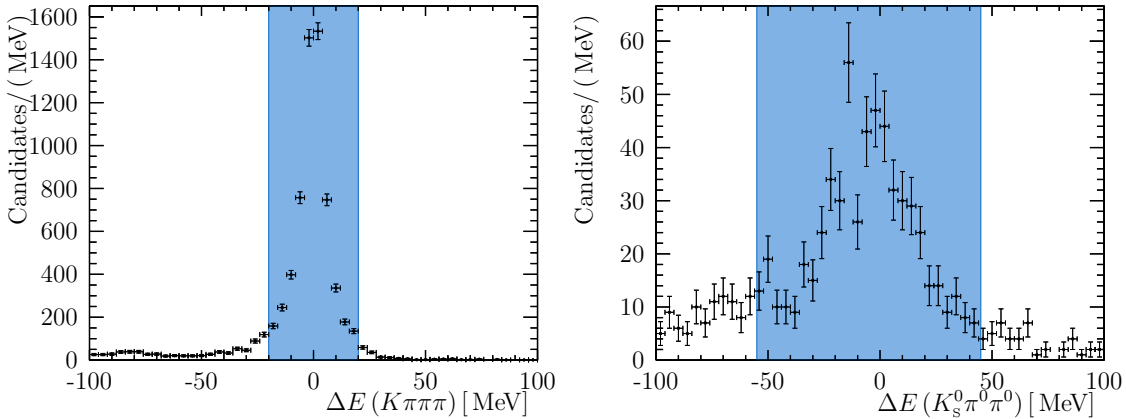


Figure 3.4: Energy difference distribution for the tags $K\pi\pi\pi$ and $K_S^0\pi^0\pi^0$, showing a considerably broader distribution in the latter due to the presence of neutral particles in the final state. The filled region indicates the requirements placed on ΔE for each tag.

- 895 • The electromagnetic showers from π^0, η candidates must both satisfy the
896 E9/E25 criteria described in Sect. 3.2.2.
- 897 • Short lived intermediate resonances such as ϕ or ω have windows placed on
898 the total invariant mass of their constituent particles. The size of this window
899 is indicative of the mass resolution rather than the physical width of these
900 states and is listed for the different resonances in Table 3.4. For tags that
901 reconstructed the η' -meson, the resultant η -meson is only reconstructed in
902 the $\gamma\gamma$ final state.

- 903 • The K_S^0 -meson candidates are required to have travelled a significant distance
904 from the e^+e^- vertex, with a flight significance of greater than two. The
905 invariant mass of the dipion system must also be within $7.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ of the
906 nominal K_S^0 mass.
- 907 • Pairs of pions that originate from K_S^0 mesons that are misidentified as coming
908 directly from a D meson are a considerable source of peaking background for
909 many of the double tags considered. This background is reduced for these
910 tags by requiring that if a secondary vertex is constructed from dipions that
911 fall within $7.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ of the nominal K_S^0 -mass, it has a flight significance of
912 less than 2.
- 913 • The relatively high Q -value of the decay mode $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+$ means that either
914 of the daughters can be outside of the geometrical acceptance of the RICH
915 detector. Hence, at least one of the daughters is required to be within the
916 acceptance.

917 Only a small percentage of K_L^0 mesons decay within the fiducial volume of
918 the detector, hence rather than fully reconstructing these modes, the constrained
919 kinematics of electron-positron machines are instead exploited in order to reconstruct
920 these tags. These tags are susceptible to significant contamination from partially
921 reconstructed backgrounds, and therefore additional requirements are placed on
922 these tags. Firstly, events that contain any additional charged tracks or neutral
923 particle candidates that are not a part of either of the single tags are vetoed. This
924 is critical in removing background from tags that would leave additional tracks
925 in the detector, such as $K_S^0 \pi^0$, but are otherwise identical to the tag. Additional
926 requirements are placed on the kinematics of the visible decay products of the
927 two partially reconstructed tags.

928 3.3.2 Background subtraction

929 Fully reconstructed tags

930 The number of signal candidates for the fully reconstructed modes is determined
931 using a two-dimensional sideband subtraction technique in the plane consisting of
932 the two beam constrained masses of the D -meson candidates. This two-dimensional
933 plane is shown in Fig. 3.5 for the $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ opposite sign double-tag. Four
934 different regions are defined in this two-dimensional plane, with each region giving
935 a handle on either the signal or a different source of background.

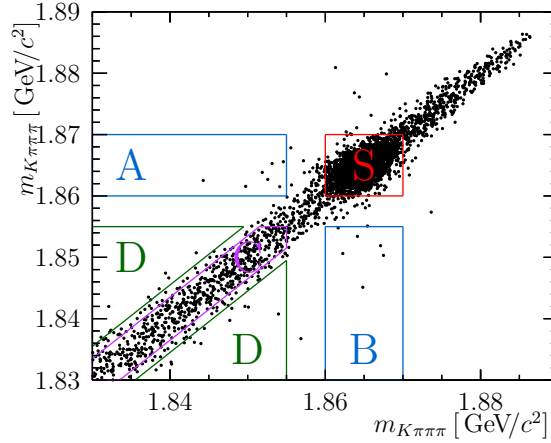


Figure 3.5: The invariant mass of one D -meson candidate against the mass of the other candidate for the $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ opposite sign double-tag. In each case the invariant mass is calculated using constraints from the beam energy.

- 936 1. Signal (S): The signal box is where both D mesons are close to the nominal
937 D -meson mass ($1.86 \rightarrow 1.87 \text{ GeV}/c^2$). The signal yield is defined by the
938 number of signal candidates in this region.
- 939 2. Partially reconstructed (A,B): One D meson is correctly reconstructed but the
940 other is not, for example one of the decay products may be mis-identified or
941 an additional decay product such as a π^0 may be missed in the reconstruction.
- 942 3. Track swapped (C): Neither of the D mesons is correctly reconstructed but
943 the total final state particle content does originate in a true $\psi(3770)$ decay,
944 thus the invariant masses of the two D -meson candidates are correlated, and
945 appear on the diagonal of the plane.
- 946 4. Flat (D): Neither of the D mesons is correctly reconstructed, and the total
947 particle content is not from a true $\psi(3770)$ decay, and hence this background
948 is flat on the mass plane. This source of background covers the entire plane,
949 not just this region, and therefore is subtracted from the other regions before
950 determining the yield of a given background.

951 The signal yield is determined by subtracting the various sources of backgrounds
952 inferred from the yields within the different sideband regions from the yield within
953 the signal box. Small additional corrections are applied to correct for limitations
954 in this technique for several of the tags, and are described in Ref. [40]. For
955 example, there is some spillover of signal candidates in the tags $K_s^0 \pi^0 \pi^0$, $K_s^0 \eta$
956 into the low mass sideband, and hence small additional factors are taken from

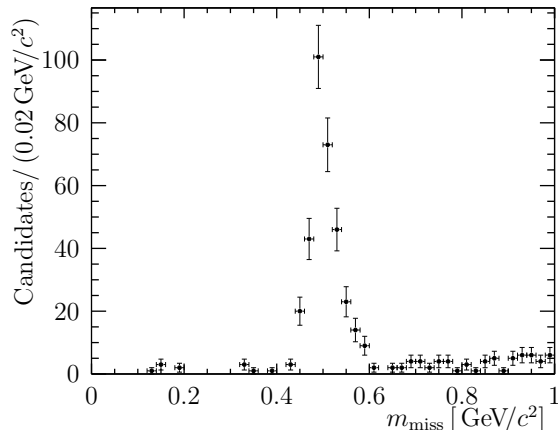


Figure 3.6: Missing mass distribution for the $K_L^0 \omega$ tag, showing a clear peak at the nominal kaon mass with a width of about 30 MeV/c.

957 simulation in order to correct for this effect. The details of these additional
 958 corrections do not alter the discussion, and are included within the calculation
 959 of the background subtracted yields.

960 Partially reconstructed tags

961 Two tags containing K_L^0 mesons are utilised in this analysis, $K_L^0 \omega$ and $K_L^0 \pi^0$, however
 962 only a few percent of K_L^0 mesons will decay inside the fiducial acceptance of the
 963 detector. Therefore, knowledge of the initial electron-positron state is used to
 964 exploit these tags without attempting to reconstruct any detector signal from the
 965 K_L^0 meson. The missing mass, m_{miss} , is constructed from the four-momenta of
 966 the visible signals in the detector that is part of the double-tag and the known
 967 kinematics of the initial electron-positron state. Double tags that are correctly
 968 reconstructed with only a K_L^0 missed will therefore be peaked in missing mass
 969 about the nominal mass of the K_L^0 meson, while various sources of background
 970 will have other shapes in the missing-mass distribution. The distributions of the
 971 different sources of double-tag candidates in missing mass are taken from simulated
 972 events, with sidebands then used to determine the overall yields of the various
 973 components in order to subtract background from the signal region. The missing
 974 mass distribution for the $K_L^0 \omega$ tag is shown in data in Fig. 3.6, which shows a clean
 975 peak about the nominal kaon mass with remarkably low background contamination
 976 and a relatively narrow width of about 30 MeV/c².

977 Peaking backgrounds

978 In addition to the flat backgrounds, there are several sources of peaking background.
 979 The yield of this contamination within the signal region is determined using large
 980 samples of simulated events. The largest source of peaking background is from
 981 decays that contain a K_s^0 , the decay products of which have been incorrectly
 982 identified as coming from one of the D mesons. This is particularly problematic
 983 for the low yield like-sign flavour tags: $K^-\pi^+$, $K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ and $K^-\pi^+\pi^0$, as the
 984 decay $D^0 \rightarrow K_s^0 K^-\pi^+$ is a singly Cabibbo-suppressed process and yields final state
 985 particles with the same charge-configuration as the signal. Therefore, without
 986 accounting for quantum correlations, events involving this decay will have a rate
 987 of roughly $20\times$ that of the correctly reconstructed double tag. This source of
 988 background is suppressed by the K_s^0 veto described in Sect. 3.3. The residual
 989 contamination from this background, as well as other sources of peaking background,
 990 is estimated from simulation.

991 3.3.3 Yield results

992 The yields for the double tags where the signal decay is $D \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ are shown
 993 in Table 3.5. Background contributions are estimated using the sidebands of the
 994 two-dimensional beam-constrained mass distribution and large samples of simulated
 995 events. The largest source of peaking background in the like-sign tags is from
 996 $D^0 \rightarrow K_s^0 K^\mp \pi^\pm$ decays, where the $K_s^0 \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-$ vertex has not been reconstructed.
 997 The peaking background yields are taken from simulation, with corrections applied
 998 for quantum correlations where relevant. In order to reduce systematic uncertainties
 999 in the interpretation, the double-tag yields of most of the CP -tagged modes are
 1000 normalised by the yield of $K^-\pi^+$ vs. the CP -tag. The details of this normalisation
 1001 procedure are given in Sect. 3.4.1. The procedure for selecting $K^-\pi^+$ vs tag events
 1002 and subtracting backgrounds are equivalent to those for the $K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ double-tags,
 1003 and the yields for these double-tags are presented in Table 3.6.

1004 Yields of $D \rightarrow K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ tag

1005 The $K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ vs $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ double-tag is considered in bins of the $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ phase-
 1006 space, with the binning described in Sect. 3.1.3. A kinematic fit is applied to the
 1007 $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ final state to constrain the D -meson candidate mass to its true value,

Table 3.5: Yields for tags vs $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$, showing estimates for signal and background yields in the signal region. Raw refers to the unsubtracted number of events within the signal region. The peaking background estimates are taken from simulation and are corrected for quantum correlations. Signal refers to the background-subtracted signal yield, with additional small corrections applied to some tags to account for limitations of the background subtraction method, and the quoted uncertainties are statistical only.

	Raw	Background		Signal
		Flat	Peaked	
$K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$	4210	125.2	51.9	4006.3 ± 65.0
$K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$	37	3.5	13.5	19.7 ± 6.2
$K^+ \pi^-$	5259	42.2	13.1	5203.7 ± 72.7
$K^- \pi^+$	38	0	11.4	26.6 ± 6.2
$K^+ \pi^- \pi^0$	10866	208	60	10598 ± 104.8
$K^- \pi^+ \pi^0$	81	3.5	24.4	53.1 ± 9.1
$\pi^+ \pi^-$	250	5.2	0.6	244.2 ± 15.9
$K^+ K^-$	546	5.9	0	542 ± 23.4
$K_S^0 \pi^0$	719	9.6	8.1	701.3 ± 26.9
$K_S^0 \omega$	386	8.8	35.6	340.7 ± 19.8
$K_S^0 \pi^0 \pi^0$	316	22.2	4.9	299.5 ± 18.3
$K_S^0 \phi$	63	0.6	4.9	57.5 ± 8.0
$K_S^0 \eta [\gamma\gamma]$	143	5.6	2.6	135 ± 12.1
$K_S^0 \eta [\pi^+ \pi^- \pi^0]$	49	3.5	8	37.5 ± 7.2
$K_S^0 \eta' [\eta \pi^+ \pi^-]$	41	0	0.9	40.1 ± 6.4
$K_L^0 \pi^0$	891	31.9	28.6	839.4 ± 30.6
$K_L^0 \omega$	329	5.3	22.3	302.8 ± 19.0
$\pi^+ \pi^- \pi^0$	1355	40.5	34.5	1280 ± 37.2

1008 allowing the momenta of the D -meson decay product to vary within according
1009 to their uncertainties. This improves the resolution of the Dalitz plot, and hence
1010 mitigates the effect of events migrating to a different bin due to resolution effects
1011 to a negligible level. The yields in the 16 ‘equal- δ_D ’ bins are shown in Table 3.7,
1012 including the raw signal yield, the total background (flat and peaking), and the
1013 final background subtracted yields.

Table 3.6: Yields for tags vs $K^-\pi^+$, showing estimates for signal and background yields in the signal region. The peaking background estimates are taken from simulation and are corrected for quantum correlations. The uncertainty on the background-subtracted signal yield is statistical only.

	Background			Signal
	Raw	Flat	Peaked	
$K^+\pi^-$	1736	12.7	0.1	1723.1 ± 41.8
$\pi^+\pi^-$	160	0.8	0.2	159 ± 12.7
K^+K^-	399	4.4	0	394.7 ± 20.0
$K_S^0\pi^0$	475	0.9	1.6	472.5 ± 21.8
$K_S^0\omega$	231	5.3	23.7	202 ± 15.3
$K_S^0\pi^0\pi^0$	234	8	2.5	223.5 ± 15.5
$K_S^0\phi$	52	1.2	3	47.8 ± 7.3
$K_S^0\eta[\gamma\gamma]$	69	1.8	0	67.2 ± 8.4
$K_S^0\eta[\pi^+\pi^-\pi^0]$	33	0.4	5.4	27.2 ± 5.8
$K_S^0\eta'[\eta\pi^+\pi^-]$	32	0	0.3	31.7 ± 5.7
$K_L^0\pi^0$	741	28.9	16.7	703 ± 27.9
$K_L^0\omega$	267	0.9	19.7	247.3 ± 17.0
$\pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$	983	6.9	24.2	951.9 ± 31.4

Table 3.7: Yields for $K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ vs $K_S^0\pi^+\pi^-$ in bins of the $K_S^0\pi^+\pi^-$ phase-space.

Bin	Raw	Bkg.	Signal	Bin	Raw	Bkg.	Signal
1	357	16.8	340.2 ± 18.9	-1	190	16.8	173.2 ± 13.8
2	213	5.8	207.2 ± 14.6	-2	60	5.8	54.2 ± 7.7
3	187	3.2	183.8 ± 13.7	-3	49	3.2	45.8 ± 7.0
4	64	3.0	61.0 ± 8.0	-4	44	3.0	41.0 ± 6.6
5	181	6.8	174.2 ± 13.5	-5	101	6.8	94.2 ± 10.0
6	112	4.1	107.9 ± 10.6	-6	37	4.1	32.9 ± 6.1
7	287	4.3	282.7 ± 16.9	-7	39	4.3	34.7 ± 6.2
8	290	6.8	283.2 ± 17.0	-8	80	6.8	73.2 ± 8.9

3.4 Measurement of observables

3.4.1 Normalisation

The ρ observables are the ratio of the measured yield to the yield expected in the absence of quantum correlations. For the double-tag F vs G , the expected yield in the absence of quantum correlations is

$$N(F, G) = N\varepsilon(F, G) (\mathcal{B}_F\mathcal{B}_{\bar{G}} + \mathcal{B}_{\bar{F}}\mathcal{B}_G), \quad (3.14)$$

3. Determination of $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ coherence factor and associated hadronic parameters at CLEO-c 43

1019 where $\varepsilon(F, G)$ is the double-tag efficiency and \mathcal{B}_X the branching ratio of $D^0 \rightarrow X$.
 1020 The normalisation constant, N , is independent of the double-tag considered. The ρ
 1021 observable is then written in terms of the background subtracted yield, $Y(F, G)$ as

$$\rho_G^F = \frac{Y(F, G)}{N(F, G)} = \frac{Y(F, G)}{N\varepsilon(F, G)} (\mathcal{B}_F \mathcal{B}_{\bar{G}} + \mathcal{B}_{\bar{F}} \mathcal{B}_G)^{-1}. \quad (3.15)$$

1022 For the flavour-specific tags, quantum correlations have negligible impact on the
 1023 opposite sign yields and hence these can be used as a normalisation channel for the
 1024 yields in order to extract the ρ -observables. Labelling the opposite sign double-tag
 1025 yield as $Y(F, \bar{G})$, the same-sign observables can be written as:

$$\rho_G^F = \frac{Y(F, G)}{Y(F, \bar{G})} \left(\frac{\mathcal{B}_F}{\mathcal{B}_{\bar{F}}} + \frac{\mathcal{B}_G}{\mathcal{B}_{\bar{G}}} \right)^{-1}, \quad (3.16)$$

1026 where the implicit assumption is that the double-tag efficiencies factorise into their
 1027 single-tag equivalents, and the efficiency for a single-tag and the conjugate tag are
 1028 identical. The ρ -observable for the $K^- 3\pi$ vs $K^+ 3\pi$ double-tag can be written as:

$$\rho_{K3\pi} = \frac{Y(K^- 3\pi, K^- 3\pi) \mathcal{B}_{K^+ 3\pi}}{Y(K^- 3\pi, K^+ 3\pi) 2\mathcal{B}_{K^- 3\pi}}, \quad (3.17)$$

1029 with similar expressions for the other flavour specific double-tags.

1030 For the CP -tags, the background-subtracted yields can be normalised using the
 1031 total number of $D^0 \bar{D}^0$ events, $N_{D^0 \bar{D}^0}$, determined using the opposite-sign double-tag
 1032 yields, and the branching ratio of the tag mode if this is known with sufficient
 1033 accuracy, as is the case for the tags $K^- K^+$ and $\pi^+ \pi^-$, with relative uncertainties
 1034 of about 1.7% each. However, the other CP -tags have relative uncertainties in their
 1035 branching fractions of between $3.4 \rightarrow 12\%$ [34]. As the maximum deviation in
 1036 the CP -tagged yields is $2r_D$, which corresponds to about 11%, knowledge of the
 1037 branching ratios becomes a limiting factor. Therefore, these tags are normalised
 1038 with respect to the double-tag yield where the signal side of the decay is $K^- \pi^+$
 1039 rather than $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$. The yield of this double-tag can be written as:

$$Y(K\pi, CP) = N\varepsilon(K\pi, CP) \mathcal{B}_{K\pi} \mathcal{B}_{CP} (1 + r_{K\pi}^2) \rho_{CP}^{K\pi}, \quad (3.18)$$

1040 which can be rearranged to give an expression for the normalisation constant and
 1041 CP branching ratio. This is substituted into the ρ observable for $K3\pi$:

$$\rho_{CP}^{K3\pi} = \frac{Y(K3\pi, CP)}{Y(K\pi, CP)} \frac{\varepsilon(K\pi, CP)}{\varepsilon(K3\pi, CP)} \frac{\mathcal{B}_{K\pi}}{\mathcal{B}_{K3\pi}} \frac{1 + r_{K\pi}^2}{1 + r_{K3\pi}^2} \rho_{CP}^{K\pi}. \quad (3.19)$$

Table 3.8: Values of external parameters used in the determination of the ρ -observables and subsequent fit to coherence and hadronic parameters.

Parameter	Value	Reference
$\mathcal{B}(D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-)$	$(8.29 \pm 0.20)\%$	[51]
$\frac{\mathcal{B}(D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+)}{\mathcal{B}(D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-)}$	$(3.25 \pm 0.11) \times 10^{-3}$	[34]
$\frac{\mathcal{B}(K^+ \pi^- \pi^0)}{\mathcal{B}(K^- \pi^+ \pi^0)}$	$(2.20 \pm 0.10) \times 10^{-3}$	[34]
$r_{K\pi}^2$	$(3.49 \pm 0.04) \times 10^{-3}$	[44]
$\delta_{K\pi}$	$(191.8_{-14.7}^{+9.5})^\circ$	[44]
x	$(0.37 \pm 0.16)\%$	[44]
y	$(0.66_{-0.10}^{+0.07})\%$	[44]
$\mathcal{B}(D^0 \rightarrow K^+ K^-)$	$(3.96 \pm 0.08) \times 10^{-3}$	[34]
$\mathcal{B}(D^0 \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^-)$	$(1.402 \pm 0.026) \times 10^{-3}$	[34]
$F_+^{\pi\pi\pi^0}$	0.973 ± 0.017	[52]

1042 This method therefore relies on the good knowledge of the $K\pi$ hadronic parameters
1043 from Ref. [44] to determine how the $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+$ vs CP tags are altered due to
1044 quantum correlations. A further simplification can be made on the assumption
1045 that the efficiency factorises into the product of efficiencies for the single-tags. The
1046 dependence on the efficiency of the CP -tag then cancels, and the ratio of signal-tag
1047 efficiencies can be written in terms of the flavour-specific opposite-sign yields. After
1048 these manipulations, the ρ observable for the double-tag is written as:

$$\rho_{CP}^{K3\pi} = \frac{Y(K3\pi, CP)}{Y(K\pi, CP)} \sqrt{\frac{Y(K\pi, K\pi)}{Y(K3\pi, K\pi)} \frac{1 + r_{K\pi}^2}{1 + r_{K3\pi}^2} \rho_{CP}^{K\pi}}. \quad (3.20)$$

1049 3.4.2 Systematic uncertainties

1050 Several sources of systematic uncertainty are considered in the measurement of the
1051 ρ -observables. These can be roughly divided into four categories:

1052 **Normalisation procedure(s):** The flavour-specific tags and most of the CP -tags
1053 are determined using normalisation channels, and the statistical uncertainties
1054 associated with these normalisation channels are propagated as a source

1055 of systematic uncertainty. For the modes that used the $K\pi$ normalisation
 1056 procedure, there are small corrections taken from simulation to account for
 1057 possible non-factorisation of efficiencies, which have corresponding systematic
 1058 uncertainties.

1059 **External parameters:** Various external inputs, such as the $D \rightarrow K\pi$ hadronic
 1060 parameters, are required to calculate the ρ observables. The values and
 1061 uncertainties of these parameters are given in Table 3.8. The uncertainties
 1062 on these parameters are propagated onto the ρ -observables as a source of
 1063 systematic uncertainty.

1064 **Background:** There are additional uncertainties on the residual contamination
 1065 from various sources of background: corrections are applied to the peak-
 1066 ing background estimates to account for quantum correlations, which have
 1067 corresponding uncertainties. An additional $\pm 20\%$ uncertainty is assigned
 1068 to the estimate of $D \rightarrow K_s^0 K^\mp \pi^\pm$ in the like-sign tags to account for any
 1069 mis-modelling of this decay mode in the simulation. Lastly, there is a potential
 1070 CP -even contribution to $D \rightarrow \phi K_s^0$ from an S-wave contribution lying under
 1071 the ϕ , therefore the CP -odd fraction for this tag is allowed to vary in the
 1072 range $[0.85, 1.0]$.

1073 **Efficiencies:** There are corrections to simulated efficiencies to account for discrep-
 1074 ancies between data and simulation, which have corresponding systematic
 1075 uncertainties. These are standard corrections for the different particle types
 1076 [53]. Lastly, there is a small systematic uncertainty to account for any non-
 1077 uniformity of the acceptance of the $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ phase-space.

1078 3.4.3 Results

1079 The ρ -observables are determined using the double-tag yields in Tables 3.5, 3.6 and
 1080 external parameters detailed in Table. 3.8. The different CP -tags are combined by
 1081 an error-weighted average, with the values for individual tags shown in Fig. 3.7.
 1082 The values for the ρ observables are:

$$\begin{aligned}
 \rho_{CP+} &= 1.061 \pm 0.019 \pm 0.028 \\
 \rho_{CP-} &= 0.926 \pm 0.027 \pm 0.042 \\
 \rho_{K3\pi} &= 0.757 \pm 0.239 \pm 0.122 \\
 \rho_{K\pi} &= 0.719 \pm 0.168 \pm 0.077 \\
 \rho_{K\pi\pi^0} &= 0.919 \pm 0.158 \pm 0.098,
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{3.21}$$

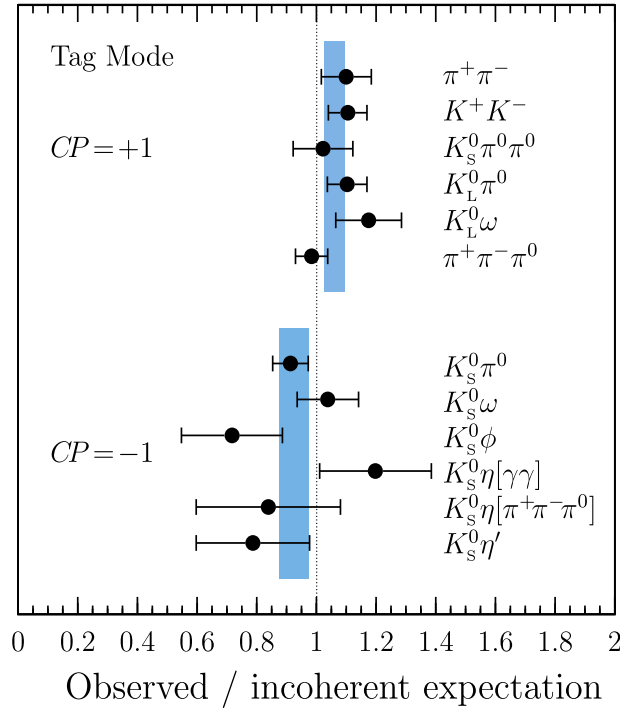


Figure 3.7: Results for the individual CP tagged observables. The error bars show both systematic and statistical uncertainties, and blue bands indicate the average ρ observable for CP^+ and CP^- tags.

1083 where the first uncertainty is statistical and the second systematic. The ρ -observables
 1084 differ significantly from unity, and hence quantum correlations are playing a role in
 1085 these processes. The pattern of CP observables, with $\rho_{CP^+} > 1$ and $\rho_{CP^-} < 1$, im-
 1086 plies an average strong-phase difference in the domain $[90, 270]^\circ$. The flavour-specific
 1087 observables are all statistically limited, with the largest systematic uncertainties for
 1088 these tags originating in the modelling of the $D \rightarrow K_S^0 K^\mp \pi^\pm$ background.

1089 The CP -tag results are systematically limited, with the largest uncertainties
 1090 originating in the finite size of the $K^-\pi^+$ normalisation samples. Finally, the
 1091 average CP -even observable Δ_{CP} as defined in Eq. 3.5 can be constructed from
 1092 ρ_{CP^\pm} observables,

$$\Delta_{CP} = 0.063 \pm 0.015 \pm 0.021. \quad (3.22)$$

1093 The $\pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$ tag is included in this average, with an appropriate correction for the
 1094 small CP -odd component in this decay mode taken from Ref. [52]. The reduced χ^2
 1095 of the combination of CP -observables is 10.3/11, indicating a good compatibility
 1096 between the different observables.

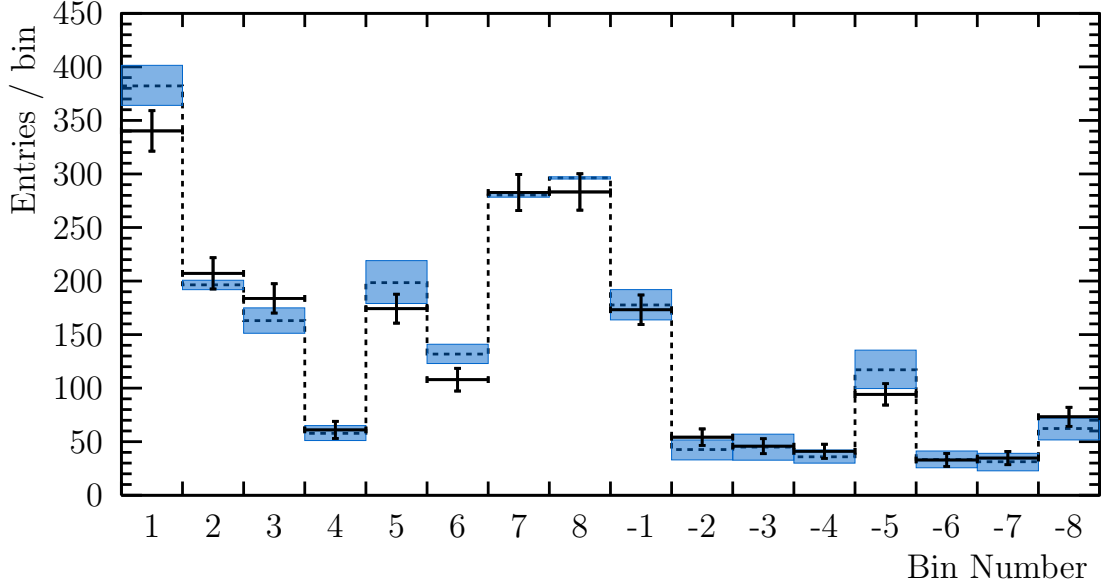


Figure 3.8: Bin-to-bin yields of $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ vs $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ double-tag. The expected yields neglecting quantum correlations are shown by the dashed line, and the filled blue area shows the extent to which quantum correlations can alter the yield.

1097 Results for the $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ tag

1098 The observables for the $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ tag are the efficiency-corrected bin-to-bin yields.
 1099 Efficiency corrections are taken from a sample of 250,000 simulated signal decays.
 1100 The efficiencies are normalised by the efficiency in the highest bin. The efficiency-
 1101 corrected bin-to-bin yields are shown in Fig. 3.8, where the efficiencies have been
 1102 normalised to the most efficient bin. The expected values neglecting quantum-
 1103 correlations per bin are calculated using the values of (c_i, s_i) obtained by a model-
 1104 independent study of $D \rightarrow K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ reported in Ref. [45], and the values of K_i
 1105 reported in Ref. [41]. The maximal deviations in the yields that can be induced
 1106 by quantum correlations are also indicated by the filled area.

1107 3.5 Interpretation

1108 Constraints on the coherence factor and average strong-phase difference for $D \rightarrow K \pi \pi \pi$
 1109 decays are determined from the ρ -observables and $K_s^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ bin-to-bin yields using
 1110 a χ^2 fit. The χ^2 includes the full covariance matrix of the measurements including
 1111 systematic uncertainties. The different observables are approximately related to
 1112 the hadronic parameters by Eq. 3.3, with full expressions including the effects

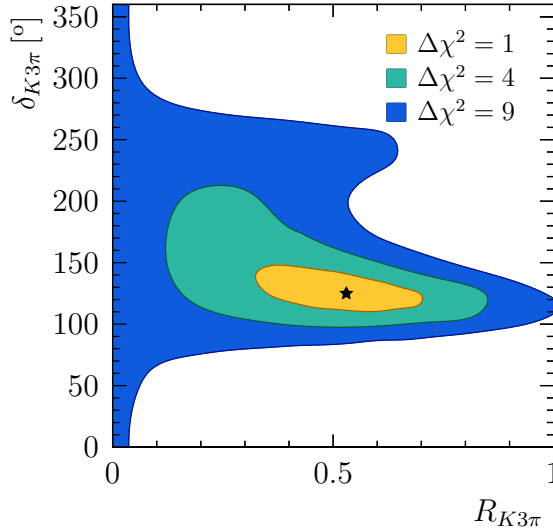


Figure 3.9: Scans of $\Delta\chi^2$ in the $R_{K3\pi} : \delta_{K3\pi}$ plane, using only observables from CLEO-c. The $\Delta\chi^2 = 1, 4, 9$ intervals are shown.

1113 of mixing given in Ref. [40]. The parameters that require external input, such
 1114 as the charm-mixing parameters, x and y , are allowed to vary in the fit with
 1115 gaussian constraints to their values found in external measurements. The hadronic
 1116 parameters for $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi^0$ are also determined, taking double-tag yields for this
 1117 decay mode from Ref. [41]. The coherence factor and average strong phase difference
 1118 found by the fit are

$$\begin{aligned} R_{K3\pi} &= 0.53_{-0.21}^{+0.18} \\ \delta_{K3\pi} &= \left(125_{-14}^{+22}\right)^\circ, \end{aligned} \quad (3.23)$$

1119 where the uncertainties are a combination of statistical and systematic uncertainties.
 1120 The χ^2 is scanned in the two-dimensional plane of $R_{K3\pi} : \delta_{K3\pi}$ to determine the
 1121 confidence levels for the different parameters, with the $\Delta\chi^2$ shown in this plane in
 1122 Fig. 3.9. The intervals are distinctly non-gaussian as the sensitivity to the average
 1123 strong phase difference degrades at lower values of the coherence factor.

1124 3.5.1 Constraints from charm mixing

1125 Measurements of charm mixing also provide constraints on the hadronic parameters.
 1126 The LHCb collaboration performed a time-dependent study [42] of the ratio of
 1127 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$ to $D^0 \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ decay rates, $R(t)$, which up to second
 1128 order in time can be expressed as:

$$R(t) = (r_{K3\pi})^2 - R_{K3\pi} r_{K3\pi} (y \cos(\delta_{K3\pi}) - x \sin(\delta_{K3\pi})) \frac{t}{\tau} + (x^2 + y^2) \frac{t^2}{\tau^2}, \quad (3.24)$$

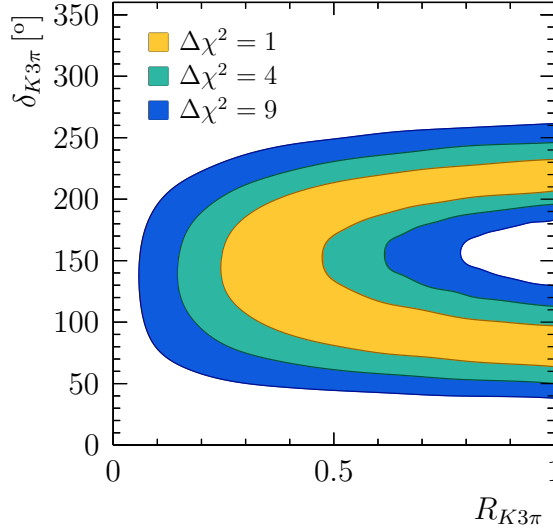


Figure 3.10: Scans of $\Delta\chi^2$ in the $R_{K3\pi} : \delta_{K3\pi}$ plane, using only constraints from charm mixing, showing the $\Delta\chi^2 = 1, 4, 9$ intervals.

1129 where t is the proper decay time, τ is the mean lifetime of neutral D -mesons. The
 1130 parameters x and y describe charm mixing. The mass splitting between the mass
 1131 eigenstates, normalised by the average width of the two states is given by x , while y
 1132 is the width splitting between the two states, normalised by twice the average width.
 1133 The first term is associated with the pure doubly-Cabibbo suppressed amplitude
 1134 and the last with the pure Cabibbo-favoured amplitude after mixing. The middle
 1135 term is due to interference between these two processes, and therefore will vanish in
 1136 the limit of small coherence ($R_{K3\pi} \rightarrow 0$). The coherence factor plays an analogous
 1137 role in charm mixing as it does to the determination of γ in $B \rightarrow DK$ decays
 1138 (Eq. 2.16), by diluting interference terms and hence reducing the sensitivity.

1139 This time-dependent ratio can be used in two ways: either the mixing parameters
 1140 can be constrained using external knowledge of the hadronic parameters, or the
 1141 hadronic parameters can be constrained using knowledge of the mixing parameters,
 1142 with Ref. [42] providing both interpretations. A scan of $\Delta\chi^2$ in the two-dimensional
 1143 plane of $R_{K3\pi}, \delta_{K3\pi}$ is shown in Fig. 3.10. This analysis does not provide a strong
 1144 constraint on the coherence factor, but provides constraints on the relative strong
 1145 phase at higher values of the coherence factor. The likelihood contours from mixing
 1146 have considerably different shapes to those from the CLEO-c observables, and
 1147 therefore are very useful in improving the total constraint.

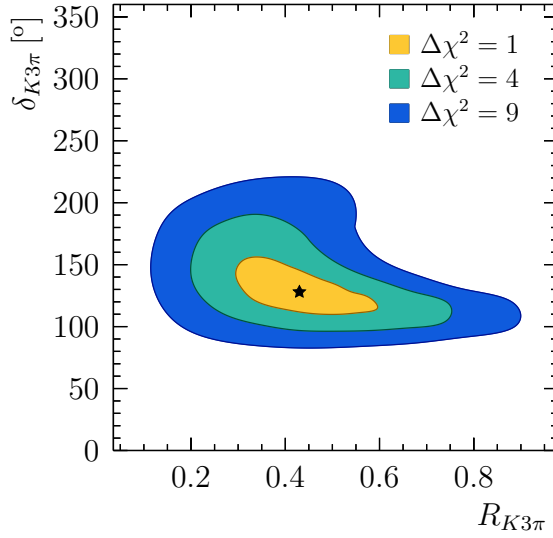


Figure 3.11: Scans of $\Delta\chi^2$ in the $R_{K3\pi} : \delta_{K3\pi}$ plane, showing the $\Delta\chi^2 = 1, 4, 9$ intervals.

1148 3.5.2 Combined fit

1149 The CLEO-c observables and LHCb charm mixing results are combined using
 1150 the same procedure as described for only fitting the CLEO-c observables. The
 1151 coherence factor and average strong phase found by the fit are

$$\begin{aligned} R_{K3\pi} &= 0.43^{+0.17}_{-0.13} \\ \delta_{K3\pi} &= \left(128^{+28}_{-17}\right)^\circ, \end{aligned} \quad (3.25)$$

1152 where the uncertainties are a combination of statistical and systematic uncertainties.
 1153 The reduced χ^2 of the combined fit is 33.5/36, indicating that there are consistent
 1154 values amongst the different observables for the coherence factor and associated
 1155 parameters. The central value of the coherence factor is slightly lower, but still
 1156 entirely statistically consistent with the CLEO-c only result. As a consequence,
 1157 the sensitivity to the average strong-phase difference is slightly lower. However,
 1158 the confidence intervals are significantly better behaved at lower values of the
 1159 coherence than the CLEO-c only results, as is demonstrated by the $\Delta\chi^2$ -scan in
 1160 the two-dimensional plane shown in Fig. 3.11.

1161 3.6 Conclusions

1162 A measurement of the hadronic parameters for the decay $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ has
 1163 been presented in this chapter using a combination of observables measured from

1164 the CLEO-c $\psi(3770)$ data set and from a $D^0 \bar{D}^0$ mixing analysis performed by the
1165 LHCb collaboration. These parameters will be useful in future measurements of the
1166 unitarity triangle angle γ using $B^- \rightarrow DK^-$ decays. The relatively low coherence
1167 factor observed for these decays indicates that there is potential for benefit in
1168 dividing the phase space of the D decay into a set of bins. It is critical to have
1169 models of the two amplitudes in order to decide how regions should be defined, the
1170 construction of which is the subject of the remainder of this thesis.

4

The LHCb detector

Contents

4.1	Vertex Locator	55
4.2	Tracking system	56
4.3	Particle identification	57
4.4	Calorimeters	58
4.5	Muon system	59
4.6	Trigger system	60
4.7	Offline	61
4.8	Simulation	62

The Large Hadron Collider beauty (LHCb) experiment is one of the four major experiments in the Large Hadron Collider (LHC) programme. The first period of operations (Run-I) ran from 2011 until 2013, during which roughly 3 fb^{-1} of proton-proton collisions were recorded by the LHCb detector. The analysis discussed in the latter part of the thesis exploits this data set. The second period of operations began in 2015 (Run-II), and data taking will continue until the end of 2018. The experiments will then shut down for two years, during which time the accelerator and LHCb will be upgraded for higher luminosity conditions.

The LHCb detector is optimised to study the decays of hadrons containing beauty and charm quarks. These quarks are preferentially produced at low angles to the beamline, as shown in Fig. 4.1. Hence, LHCb is optimised in the forward region, instrumenting pseudorapidities between 2 and 5, which corresponds to an

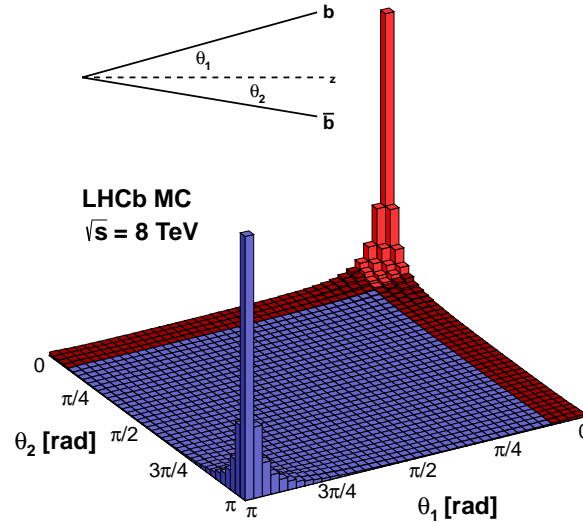


Figure 4.1: Expected production cross-section of $b\bar{b}$ quarks as a function of the angle between each quark and the beam axis. The coverage of the LHCb detector is indicated in red. Figure taken from Ref. [54].

1198 angular coverage of about 14.5° , or 4% of the full solid angle. Despite this small
 1199 angular acceptance, roughly a quarter of heavy quarks produced result in decay
 1200 products inside the fiducial volume of the detector.

1201 This chapter describes the different LHCb sub-detectors in Sect. 4.1- 4.5, which
 1202 provide vertexing, tracking, particle identification and energy measurements. These
 1203 different sub-systems are illustrated in Fig. 4.2. In addition to these sub-systems, it
 1204 is critical to be able to quickly identify events that might contain interesting physics,
 1205 which is the role of the trigger system that is briefly introduced in Sect. 4.6. Events
 1206 that are deemed sufficiently interesting by the trigger are saved for further offline
 1207 reconstruction and analysis, which is described in Sect. 4.7. Finally, it is important
 1208 to understand the detector response in order to extract the underlying physics
 1209 observables, which is typically achieved using a mixture of data-driven techniques
 1210 and large samples of simulated events, with the LHCb simulation, described in
 1211 Sect. 4.8. A full description of the LHCb detector and detailed discussion on the
 1212 detector performance is given in Ref. [55].

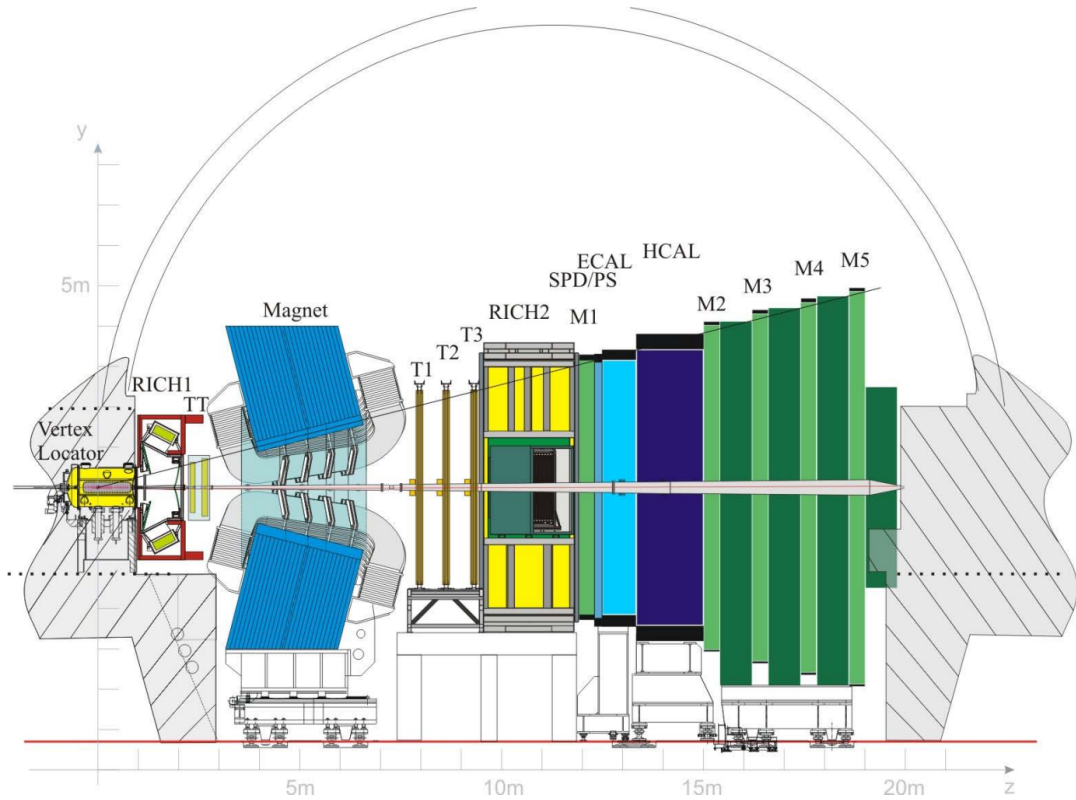


Figure 4.2: Diagram of the LHCb detector, showing the different sub-detector systems.

1213 4.1 Vertex Locator

1214 The VERTex LOcator (VELO) is the closest detector to the interaction region, and
 1215 is designed to provide precision measurements of the positions of both the primary
 1216 proton-proton collisions and the displaced vertices that are characteristic of the
 1217 decays of hadrons containing b and c quarks. The VELO consists of 21 pairs of

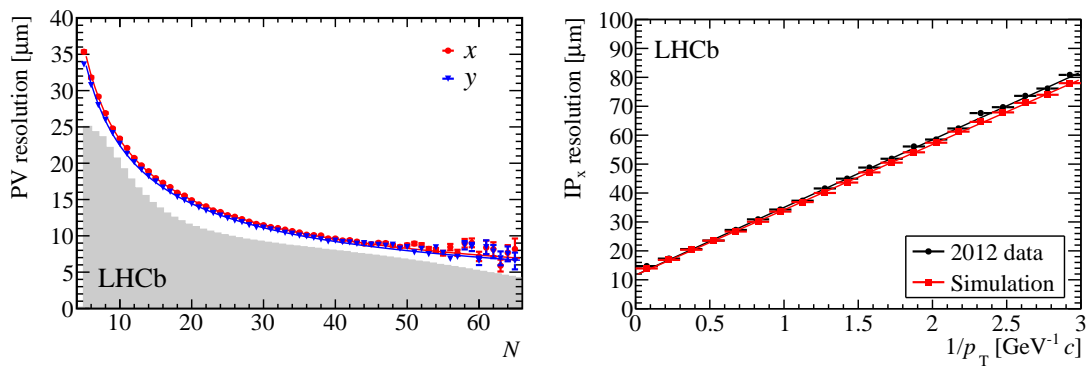


Figure 4.3: Performance plots for the VELO. Right: Impact parameter resolution in the x direction. Left: Position resolution as a function of the number of tracks included in fitting the vertex. Both figures are reproduced from Ref. [55].

1218 silicon strip modules placed around the interaction region. Each module has two
 1219 silicon strip sensors, one with strips in the radial direction and the other in the ϕ
 1220 direction. While the beams are being injected and stabilised, the inner edge of the
 1221 VELO modules are about 35 mm from the interaction region. Once the beams are
 1222 stable, the VELO is mechanically closed around the interaction region until the inner
 1223 edge is about 5 mm from where the beams collide. The positions of vertices are fitted
 1224 using tracks reconstructed by the VELO. The performance of the VELO is discussed
 1225 in detail in Ref. [56]. The transverse position resolution of primary vertices is shown
 1226 in Fig. 4.3 as a function of the number of tracks, which demonstrates an extremely
 1227 precise measurement of the position of the underlying proton-proton interaction.
 1228 This in turn allows for a precise measurement of the impact parameter (IP), the
 1229 distance of closest approach between a track and a vertex. The precision of the IP
 1230 measurement is critical in separating tracks that come from secondary vertices from
 1231 those originating in the primary vertex. The IP resolution is $(15 + 29/p_T) \mu\text{m}$ and
 1232 is shown in Fig. 4.3, with the resolution degrading for low momentum tracks due to
 1233 multiple scattering. The VELO therefore provides excellent identification of tracks
 1234 coming from secondary vertices, as is characteristic of the decay products of hadrons
 1235 containing the heavy quarks which typically fly $\mathcal{O}(1)$ cm in LHCb before decaying.

1236 4.2 Tracking system

1237 The tracking system consists of four different detectors and a conventional dipole
 1238 magnet with approximately 4Tm of bending power in the horizontal plane. An
 1239 important attribute of LHCb is the ability to change the polarity of the magnet,
 1240 which is typically done several times during a year of data taking. As positively and
 1241 negatively charged particles will bend in opposite directions for a given polarity,
 1242 changing the polarity of the magnet mitigates systematic uncertainties from the
 1243 detector having an asymmetrical tracking efficiency.

1244 The first tracking station, the Tracker Turicensis (TT) is placed upstream of
 1245 the magnet, and instruments the full LHCb acceptance with four layers of silicon
 1246 strip sensors. The three stations placed downstream of the magnet consist of an
 1247 inner region instrumented with silicon strips (collectively referred to as the Inner
 1248 Tracker or IT), and a larger outer region instrumented with drift-tube detectors
 1249 (referred to as the Outer Tracker or OT). Tracks are measured by these sub-detectors
 1250 with a momentum resolution of between 0.5% and 1%, depending on the track

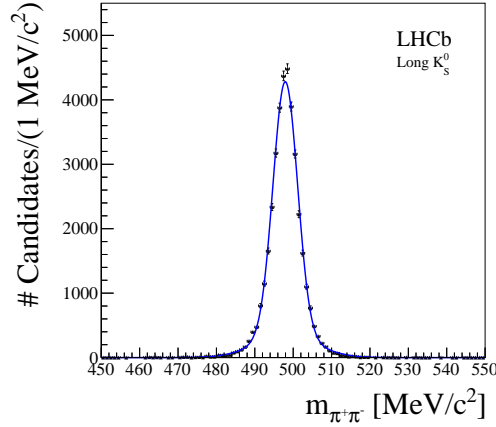


Figure 4.4: Invariant mass of $K_S^0 \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-$ candidates, where both of the charged pions have left tracks in the VELO detector and the K_S^0 vertex is well separated from the PV. Reproduced from Ref. [55]

1251 momentum. The momentum resolution is crucial in providing an excellent invariant-
 1252 mass resolution. The invariant-mass distribution for $K_S^0 \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-$ candidates is
 1253 shown in Fig. 4.4, with a mass resolution of about $3.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$. Momentum resolution
 1254 plays an additional role in amplitude analyses: a good resolution is required for such
 1255 a study as the amplitude is a (Lorentz-invariant) function of the four-momenta, and
 1256 hence will be difficult to describe if the momentum resolution is not considerably
 1257 better than the smallest features of the amplitude.

1258 4.3 Particle identification

1259 The separation of different species of long-lived charged particles is crucial in
 1260 performing flavour physics measurements. For example, it is essential to be able to
 1261 distinguish between kaons and pions in order to perform the analysis described in the
 1262 latter chapters of this thesis. The principal component of the particle identification
 1263 (PID) system at LHCb is a pair of Ring Imaging CHerenkov (RICH) detectors. A
 1264 ring of photons is produced when a charged particle traverses a medium at a velocity
 1265 greater than the speed of light in that medium. The opening angle of this ring,
 1266 sometimes referred to as the Cherenkov angle, can be used to infer the velocities of
 1267 particles, which combined with momentum information from the tracking system
 1268 can be used to form a likelihood that a track was left by a particle of a given
 1269 species. Information from the calorimeters and muon system is also combined into
 1270 forming a global likelihood that a track is from a given species. RICH detectors

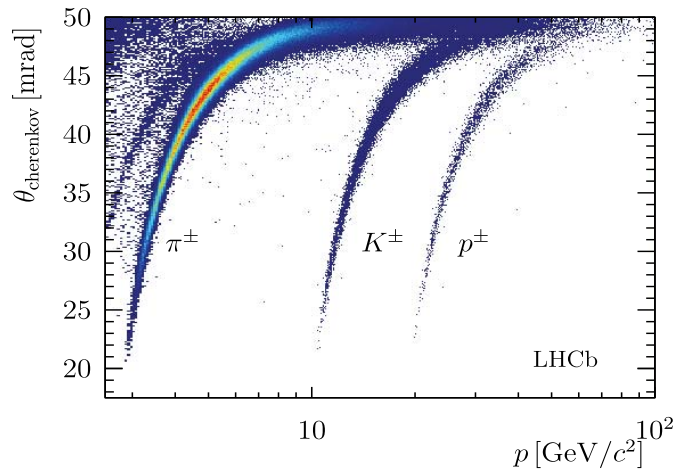


Figure 4.5: Cherenkov angle reconstructed for different species of particles as a function of momentum in RICH-I. Reproduced from Ref. [55].

1271 are optimised for a specific range of track momentum by selection of the radiator
 1272 medium. A medium with higher refractive index has a reduced energy threshold at
 1273 which Cherenkov radiation is emitted, but the dependence on velocity also saturates
 1274 at lower energies, while the converse is true for a medium with a lower refractive
 1275 index. Therefore, LHCb has two RICH detectors and three radiator media to cover
 1276 the full momentum range. The first RICH detector (RICH-I) is placed directly
 1277 after the VELO, before the magnetic field and tracking system, and is optimised
 1278 for low momentum particles. RICH-I has two radiators, aerogel¹ and C₄F₁₀. The
 1279 Cherenkov angle for different species of particles in this detector is shown in Fig. 4.5
 1280 as a function of track momentum, and provides good separation of pions and kaons
 1281 up to about 20 GeV/c. The second RICH detector is placed downstream of the
 1282 magnet, and is designed to give separation of tracks with momentum between
 1283 15 GeV/c → 100 GeV/c, and as such uses CF₁₀ as a radiator medium, which has a
 1284 considerably lower refractive index than that used in RICH-I.

1285 4.4 Calorimeters

1286 The calorimeter system provides a fast trigger signal on non-muon tracks with
 1287 high transverse energy, which is crucial for selecting purely hadronic final states.
 1288 The calorimeters are also used to identify electrons, photons and hadrons, and
 1289 provide a measurement of their energy. The calorimeter system consists of four

¹The aerogel was removed for Run-II due to a degradation of performance at higher occupancies

1290 sub-detectors. The calorimeters have the same basic design: particles traversing
 1291 the detector produce scintillation light, which is collected by photo-multiplier tubes.
 1292 The furthest sub-detector upstream is a scintillating pad detector (SPD). The
 1293 SPD has no radiating material upstream, and hence energy is only deposited by
 1294 charged particles, therefore providing separation between photons and electrons.
 1295 The SPD is separated from the preshower (PS) detector by a thin lead converter
 1296 of about 15 mm. The next detector is the electromagnetic calorimeter (ECAL),
 1297 which has interleaved layers of lead absorbers and scintillating layers. The ECAL is
 1298 sufficiently thick that showers from high energy photons are fully contained, and
 1299 hence $1\% \oplus \frac{10\%}{\sqrt{E(\text{GeV})}}$ is the nominal resolution [57].

1300 The furthest calorimeter sub-system downstream is the hadron calorimeter
 1301 (HCAL), which has the same design as the ECAL but with much thicker absorbers
 1302 made of iron. The HCAL is too thin to fully absorb hadronic showers, and hence
 1303 has a limited energy resolution of $\frac{\sigma_E}{E} = \frac{69\%}{\sqrt{E(\text{GeV})}} \oplus 9\%$ [57]. The limited energy
 1304 resolution is not a critical concern as the main purpose of the HCAL is to provide
 1305 a trigger signal for purely hadronic final states, which can require less stringent
 1306 energy requirements on particles.

1307 4.5 Muon system

1308 The muon system consists of five different stations. The first is placed upstream of
 1309 the calorimeter system, and the other four downstream. The first station consists of
 1310 both gas multiplier foils in the inner region where the particle flux is highest, and an
 1311 outer region instrumented with multi-wire proportional chambers (MWPCs). The
 1312 four downstream stations consist of MWPCs, with 80 cm thick iron plates placed
 1313 in between the active areas to select only highly penetrating particles, i.e. muons.
 1314 The muon system performs several important functions: firstly, it provides positive
 1315 identification of muons, as there is only a small probability any other species of
 1316 particle will be able to traverse the entire detector. Conversely, it provides some
 1317 negative identification of the other species of particle: if a track does not have hits in
 1318 the muon system associated with it, it is more likely to be of one of the other species.
 1319 Information from the muon system is therefore combined with information from
 1320 the RICH detectors and calorimeter system in forming the likelihood associated
 1321 with assigning a given particle species to a track. A second important function
 1322 of the muon system is to provide a rough estimate of the transverse momentum

1323 of the muon. The first three stations are segmented enough in the bending plane
 1324 of the magnet to give a first estimate of the muon transverse momentum with
 1325 roughly 20% precision. This is used in the hardware trigger to identify muons with
 1326 high transverse momentum, which is a clean trigger signal used in many analyses,
 1327 including those presented in the latter half of this thesis.

1328 4.6 Trigger system

1329 The LHCb trigger [58] system consists of three sep-
 1330 arate levels of triggers. At each stage, more of the
 1331 detector is read out and more sophisticated selections
 1332 applied. A summary of the data flow through the
 1333 trigger system is shown in Fig. 4.6. The Level-0
 1334 (L0) trigger is designed to reduce the data-rate to a
 1335 manageable level for the latter stages of the triggering
 1336 system. The bunch crossing rate during Run-I was
 1337 20 MHz, and increased to 40 MHz for Run-II. Only
 1338 parts of the detector are read out in making the L0
 1339 decision. The L0 trigger reduces the rate to about
 1340 1 MHz, such that the higher levels of the trigger can
 1341 use the full detector information. The L0 trigger relies
 1342 on the calorimeter system to provide a fast signal on
 1343 tracks with large transverse energy, which is typical
 1344 of events that contain interesting physics, as opposed
 1345 to the relatively soft and dominant spectrum from pure QCD events. The muon
 1346 system also provides a first measurement of the transverse momentum of highly
 1347 penetrating particles, i.e. muons, and provides a clean trigger for many analyses.

1348 The second stage of the trigger system is the High Level Trigger or HLT, and
 1349 reduces the 1 MHz rate from the L0 trigger to about a few kHz. The HLT is split
 1350 into two stages. The first stage, HLT1, reads out information from the VELO
 1351 and TT stations in addition to those detectors used in L0. Primary vertices are
 1352 reconstructed using a minimum of 5 VELO tracks, then the impact parameter of
 1353 other tracks with respect to each vertex is measured. Tracks with large impact
 1354 parameters, those that are likely to come from secondary vertices, are matched
 1355 with hits in the tracking stations. If a track can be matched with hits in the muon

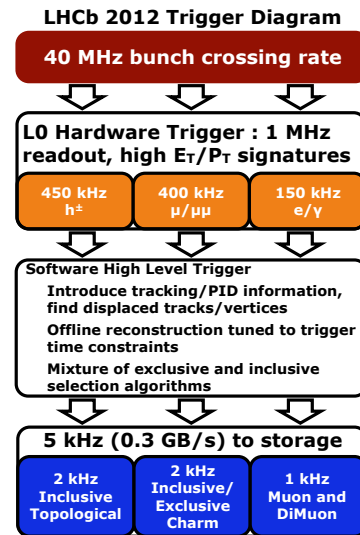


Figure 4.6: The trigger scheme used by LHCb during Run-I.

1356 chambers, it is also extrapolated onto the tracking stations. HLT1 reduces the rate
1357 to about 40 kHz. This allows the second stage of the HLT, HLT2, to perform a
1358 more complete reconstruction of the event. This stage of the trigger contains both
1359 exclusive selections that make particular requirements for a given analysis, and
1360 inclusive selections that use the broad characteristics of decays of interest. The
1361 analysis presented in this thesis uses a set of inclusive trigger signals that rely on
1362 reconstructing the topology of a B -meson decay: Two, three or four high quality
1363 tracks with low distances of closest approach to each other are combined to form
1364 a secondary vertex. Various quantities related to this group of tracks, such as
1365 their total transverse momentum or the significance of the separation between this
1366 secondary vertex and the primary vertex, are combined using a boosted decision tree
1367 [59] to form a single discriminator. Events pass the topological trigger if the value
1368 of this discriminator passes some threshold. Events containing a track identified
1369 as a lepton are rarer than those where all tracks are identified as hadrons, and
1370 hence the threshold on the topological triggers is lowered if one of the tracks is
1371 identified as a lepton, by matching hits in the muon chambers or clusters in the
1372 ECAL that are identified as coming from electrons. The output rate of HLT2 is
1373 about 10 kHz, which is then written to disk to be reconstructed offline using the
1374 full detector information and exclusive selections on physics events of interest.

1375 4.7 Offline

1376 Events written to disk by the trigger are processed with full detector alignment
1377 and calibration to reconstruct all the tracks and vertices, including calculating the
1378 likelihoods of tracks coming from different particle species. A process referred to
1379 as *stripping* performs hundreds of different dedicated reconstructions on events
1380 to attempt to match them with particular physics channels. For example, the
1381 decay $D \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ is reconstructed by attempting to form a good vertex from
1382 four tracks that is well separated from the PV. Various criteria are applied on the
1383 different components of the decay chain, such as thresholds on the momenta of
1384 tracks or “windows” on the total invariant-mass of some combination of tracks
1385 about the nominal mass of the reconstructed particle. These dedicated selections
1386 are referred to as *stripping lines*, and are performed centrally using the Worldwide
1387 LHC Computing Grid (WLCG) [60].

4.8 Simulation

Samples of simulated events are utilised to understand the detector response, and are also often used to optimise the selection requirements for a given physics channel. Underlying proton-proton interactions, fragmentation and the hadronisation of the resultant quarks are simulated using PYTHIA [61, 62]. These simulated events are typically required to hadronize to a particle of interest, such as a charged B -meson. The decay of these hadrons is then simulated using the EvtGen [49] package, which is typically configured such that the hadrons are forced to decay into a final state of interest. EvtGen is supplemented by a plug-in system that allows the generation of the specific kinematics of a decay channel. For example, a plug-in has been developed to simulate multi-body decays using the amplitude framework described in Sect. 6.6. The CPU requirements of the simulation are often reduced by placing additional requirements on the generated signal candidate to remove events that would not pass the selection, such as those with tracks of interest outside the fiducial acceptance of the detector or produced at very low momentum. Such events are discarded before simulating the detector response, as this stage normally takes the majority of the processing time.

The generated particles are then propagated through the detector using the GEANT4 framework [63, 64], including material interactions. The response of the front-end electronics and the hardware trigger are then simulated separately. Simulated events then should closely emulate the data events recorded by the detector, and are processed with the same software trigger, reconstruction and stripping selections as the real data. Truth level quantities, such as the relationships between different particles in the decay chain and the four-momentum they had when generated are kept such that these can be compared with the reconstructed quantities.

5

1413

1414 Selection of $D^0 \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$ decays

1415

Contents

1416

1417	5.1 Secondary charm decays and flavour tagging	64
1418	5.2 Preselection	65
1419	5.2.1 Trigger requirements	70
1420	5.3 Offline selection	70
1421	5.3.1 Multivariate classifier	70
1422	5.3.2 Rectangular cuts	73
1423	5.4 Peaking backgrounds	75
1424	5.4.1 Misidentified backgrounds	75
1425	5.4.2 Broken charm	77
1426	5.4.3 $D^0 \rightarrow K_s^0 K^+ \pi^-$	78
1427	5.5 Yield extraction	79
1428	5.6 Mixing correction	82
1429	5.7 Phase-space acceptance	83
1430	5.8 Summary	87

1431

1432

1434 The amplitude analyses of $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ are
1435 based on 3 fb^{-1} of Run-I LHCb data taken in 2011 and 2012 at 7 TeV and 8 TeV,
1436 respectively. The decay chain that is reconstructed to identify neutral charm mesons
1437 is discussed in Sect. 5.1. The loose offline selection applied in reconstructing this
1438 decay is described in Sect.5.2. Further selection is applied offline, using both a
1439 multivariate classifier and cuts on certain key discriminators. This is described in
1440 Sect.5.3. Various sources of peaking background are considered in Sect.5.4. The
1441 signal and background yields for each mode are extracted using a two-dimensional

1442 unbinned maximum likelihood fit to the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} : \Delta m \equiv m_{K\pi\pi\pi\text{slow}} - m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ plane,
 1443 as described in Sect. 5.5. Section 5.6 assesses the size of the mixing effects in the
 1444 selected sample. Finally, the impact of the full reconstruction and selection chain
 1445 on the phase-space acceptance is estimated using simulated events in Sect. 5.7.

1446 5.1 Secondary charm decays and flavour tagging

1447 The decay chain $B \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ \mu^- \nu X$ with $D^*(2010)^+ \rightarrow D^0 \pi^+$ is reconstructed
 1448 as a clean source of neutral D mesons. The topology of this decay chain is shown in
 1449 Fig. 5.1. The hard proton-proton interaction at the primary vertex (PV) produces
 1450 b -quark(s), as well as numerous other decay products. The b -quarks then hadronize
 1451 to one of a number of mesons or baryons ($B^+, B^0 \dots$). The b -hadron then flies about
 1452 1 cm in the detector rest frame before decaying. A few percent of b -hadrons will
 1453 decay to the $D^*(2010)^+ \mu^- \nu X$ final state, where state X can be some additional
 1454 hadrons. For example, the decays of charged B -mesons require a minimum of one
 1455 additional charged hadron from the B decay in order to decay to this final state.
 1456 The $D^*(2010)^+$ strongly decays to a charm meson and a pion, which is referred
 1457 to as *slow* due to the relatively small momentum transfer involved in this decay.
 1458 The D -meson then flies about 0.5 cm before decaying.

1459 The flavour of the neutral D -meson must be determined in order to distinguish
 1460 between the $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ modes. This can be
 1461 measured at its production by flavour tagging. The charge of the muon and pion
 1462 from the $D^*(2010)$ decay are used to infer the flavour of the neutral D meson at
 1463 its production. A negatively charged muon and positively charged pion implies a
 1464 D^0 was produced, whereas a positively charged muon and negatively charged pion
 1465 implies a \bar{D}^0 was produced. As two different tracks are used to tag the flavour of the
 1466 D -meson, the sample is referred to as *double-tagged*¹. Flavour tagging measures the
 1467 flavour of the neutral D -meson when it is produced, however due to charm mixing
 1468 the physical meson will contain a component from the other flavour when it decays.
 1469 Therefore, the amplitudes that are measured will contain a mixture of Cabibbo-
 1470 suppressed and favoured amplitudes. Owing to the low rate of such oscillations, the
 1471 mixing contribution to the measured $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ amplitude is expected to
 1472 be small. In the $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ case, the contribution from mixing and then
 1473 the DCS amplitude is negligible. Due to this distinction, $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ is

¹This is an entirely different meaning to double-tagging in the context of Ch. 3

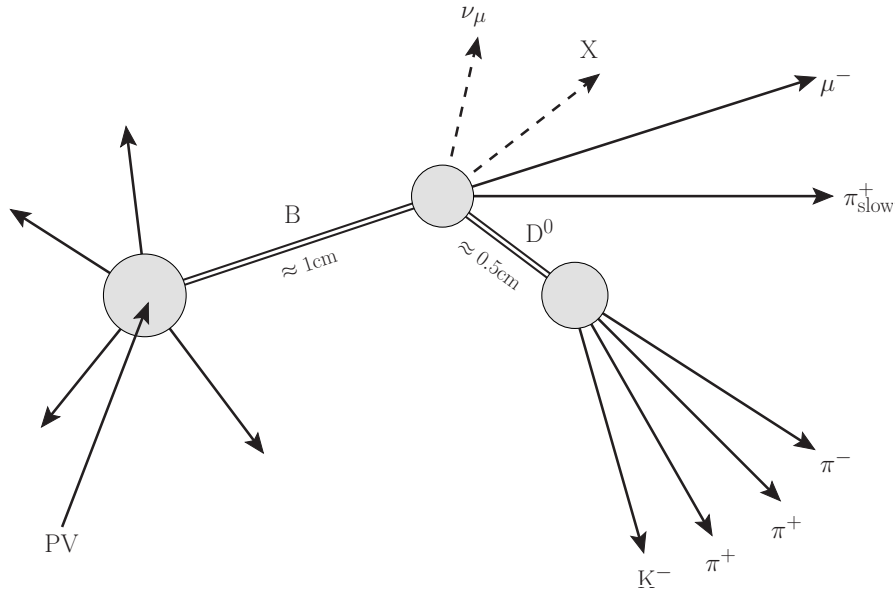


Figure 5.1: Topology of doubly-tagged secondary charm decays.

1474 referred to as Right Sign (RS), and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ as Wrong Sign (WS), where
 1475 the D^0 flavour in each case is determined by the tag.

1476 The method of selecting a double-tagged semileptonic sample can be contrasted
 1477 with the alternative possible approach of exploiting prompt production of neutral
 1478 D mesons. Although the cross section for prompt production is considerably higher,
 1479 there are several advantages to the double-tagged semileptonic sample. Firstly, the
 1480 additional separation from the primary vertex (PV) from the flight of the B meson
 1481 suppresses backgrounds from random combination of particles from the underlying
 1482 proton-proton interaction. Secondly, the muon from the B provides an efficient
 1483 trigger for these decays that is independent of the D^0 daughters. Thirdly, the
 1484 additional boost from the B decay de-correlates the D rest frame from the lab
 1485 frame, which ensures a relatively uniform phase-space acceptance. These different
 1486 factors mean that the doubly-tagged sample has a significantly higher purity than
 1487 the prompt sample, which is critical for studying the WS decay. Therefore, the
 1488 double-tag sample is an ideal source of D mesons for an amplitude analysis.

1489 5.2 Preselection

1490 Candidates are reconstructed centrally in a so-called *stripping* according to a
 1491 dedicated physics reconstruction of a given channel, as described in Sect. 4.7.
 1492 The $B \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ [D^0 \pi_{\text{slow}}^+] \mu^- X$ decay chain is reconstructed in stages, with

1493 requirements placed on tracks and various composite objects, such as the D, B
 1494 meson candidates, to identify high quality signal candidates and reject background.
 1495 The following variables and definitions are used in the selection:

- 1496 • DOCA is the distance of closest approach between two tracks. A small DOCA
 1497 between two tracks implies they may have come from a common vertex. This
 1498 measure is often used early in a selection to reduce the number of combinations
 1499 of tracks that vertices can be built from. The distance of closest approach
 1500 in units of its error, labelled χ_{DOCA}^2 by convention, is also often a useful
 1501 discriminating variable.
- 1502 • IP is the impact parameter, defined as the distance of closest approach
 1503 between a track and a given vertex, and is pictured in Fig. 5.2. A large
 1504 impact parameter with respect to a primary vertex implies that a track may
 1505 have originated from a secondary vertex. Selecting tracks that come from the
 1506 decays of secondary particles using the impact parameter therefore relies on
 1507 the flight distance / lifetime of the decaying particle in order to discriminate
 1508 between these tracks and those that originate from a primary vertex and thus
 1509 have a smaller impact parameter. The ‘significance’ of the impact parameter,
 1510 which is labelled χ_{IP}^2 , is defined as the difference in χ^2 for a fit to a vertex
 1511 and a fit to the vertex excluding a track (or set of tracks), and is also a powerful
 1512 discriminator on whether tracks originate from a given vertex.

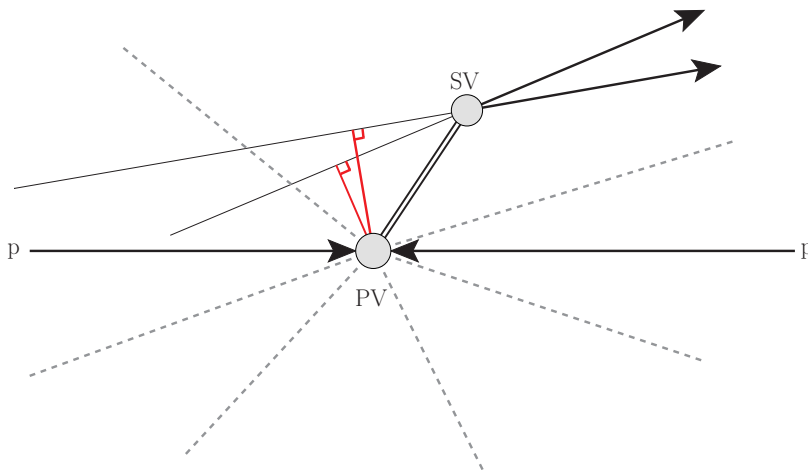


Figure 5.2: The geometry of the decay of a particle (double line) that flies a significant distance from the PV before decaying at a secondary vertex (SV). The decay products of this particle have large impact parameters, which are indicated in red, with respect to the PV.

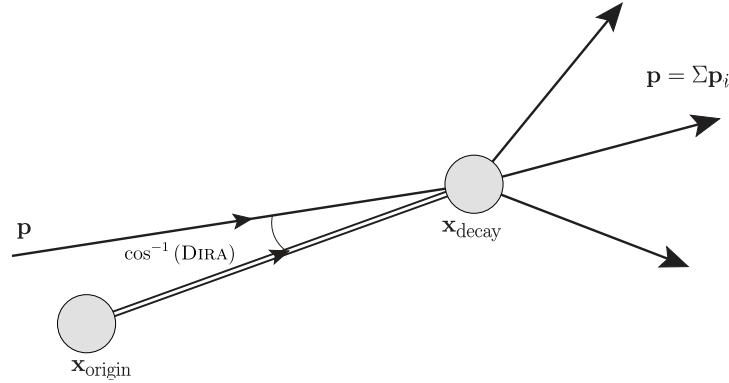


Figure 5.3: A short-lived particle produced at $\mathbf{x}_{\text{origin}}$ flies some distance before decaying at $\mathbf{x}_{\text{decay}}$. Shows the definition of the DIRA for these two vertices and, \mathbf{p} , the momentum of the decaying particle inferred from its decay products.

- 1513 • BPV (best primary vertex) is the primary vertex that a track is most consistent
1514 with originating from, defined by the vertex with which the track has the
1515 lowest impact parameter significance. Several useful quantities are defined
1516 with respect to this vertex, for example, primary vertex impact parameters
1517 are usually defined with respect to this ‘best’ vertex.
- 1518 • DV (decay vertex) is the vertex reconstructed from the decay products of
1519 a relatively short-lived particle such as a B or D meson. The fit quality
1520 associated with such a vertex, χ^2_{DV} , is a common discriminator.
- 1521 • The cosine of the direction angle, or DIRA, is defined as the cosine of the
1522 angle between the path implied by a pair of vertices and the direction of the
1523 momentum reconstructed from its decay products, as shown in Fig. 5.3. If
1524 both vertices have been correctly identified and the decaying particle has been
1525 fully reconstructed, the two vectors should be close to parallel, and $\text{DIRA} \rightarrow 1$.
1526 The angle between the two vectors will be larger if one or more of the tracks
1527 do not truly originate from the decay vertex, hence this discriminator is useful
1528 in reducing combinatorial backgrounds.
- 1529 • Fits are used to measure track parameters and vertex positions. Requirements
1530 on the quality of these fits are useful in rejecting fake tracks and vertices that
1531 are not correctly reconstructed, where fit quality is described by a χ^2 per
1532 degree of freedom.
- 1533 • The difference in log-likelihoods between particle mass hypothesis x and y
1534 for a track is given by Δ_{x-y} . For example, $\Delta_{K-\pi}(K^-)$ is the difference in
1535 log-likelihoods between kaon and pion mass hypotheses for the K^- candidate.

Table 5.1: Offline preselection requirements on track objects

	μ	π_{slow}	K	π
p_T [GeV/c]	> 1.20	0.18	0.30	0.25
p [GeV/c]	> 3.0	-	0.20	0.20
P_{ghost} [%]	< 50.0	-	50.0	50.0
χ_{IP}^2 (BPV)	> 9.0	-	9.0	9.0
$\chi_{\text{track}}^2/\text{dof}$	< 4.0	-	4.0	4.0
PID	$\Delta_{\mu-\pi} > 0.0$	-	$\Delta_{K-\pi} > 8.0$	$\Delta_{K-\pi} < 10.0$

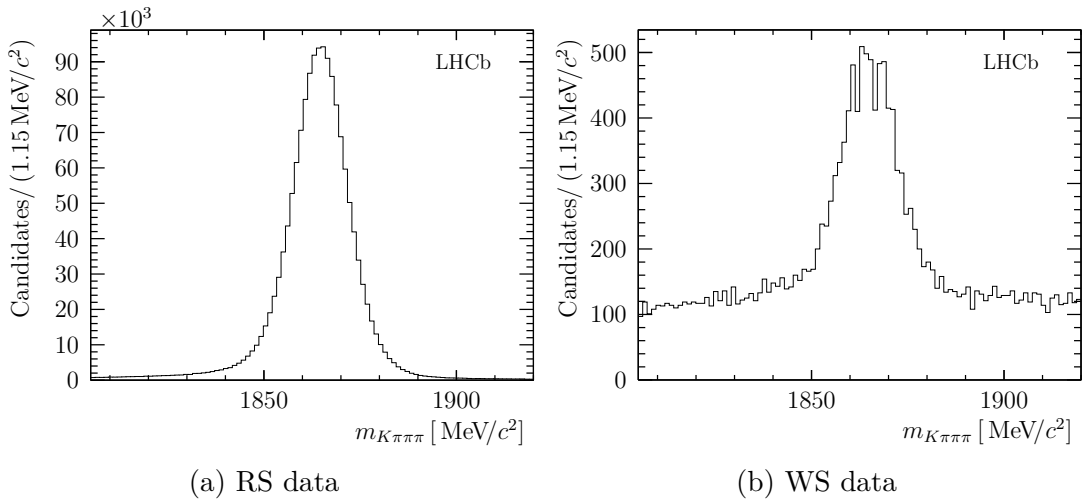
The likelihood is taken from the particle identification procedure, which is mainly reliant on information from the RICH detectors to distinguish between hadrons, with additional information coming from the muon system to identify muons. Identifying a track with something other than a pion is a powerful discriminator against combinatorial backgrounds, as the majority of particles produced in proton-proton collisions are pions. It also is used to discriminate against specific physics backgrounds, such as misidentifying a RS decay as a WS decay via the exchange of two particle hypotheses.

- A ghost track is a track where a significant fraction of the hits associated with the track do not truly originate from the track. A multivariate classifier known as the *ghost-track probability* (P_{ghost}) is used to suppress these tracks, which combines fit quality information from the different sub-detectors into a single probability that the hits associated to a track truly originate from the track.

Composite particle candidates are built from tracks selected according to the requirements listed in Table. 5.1. The kaon must be well identified as a kaon by the RICH detectors, and all tracks except the slow pion must be well separated from the primary vertex and of good quality. The requirements on the composite particle candidates built from these tracks are listed in Table. 5.2. A D^0 candidate is then built from a kaon and three pions that all have small distances of closest approach with respect to each other. A fit is then performed to the common origin vertex of the four tracks, and various requirements placed on the fit and topology, such as that this secondary vertex is well separated from the primary vertex ($\chi_{\text{BPV}}^2 > 100$). These requirements are listed in full in Table. 5.2. A slow pion is then added to the D^0 candidate to make a D^* candidate, and finally a muon added to the D^* candidate to make the B candidate.

Table 5.2: Offline preselection requirements on composite objects

Candidate	Requirement
D^0	$1.80 \text{ GeV}/c^2 < m < 1.92 \text{ GeV}/c^2$
	$\chi_{\text{DV}}^2/\text{dof} < 6.0$
	$p_T > 1.8 \text{ GeV}/c$
	$\text{DIRA}(\text{BPV}) > 0.99$
	$\chi_{\text{DOCA}}^2 < 9.0$
	$\chi_{\text{BPV}}^2 > 100$
D^*	$m - m_{D^0} < 0.17 \text{ GeV}/c^2$
	$\chi_{\text{DV}}^2/\text{dof} < 8.0$
B	$2.5 \text{ GeV}/c^2 < m < 6.0 \text{ GeV}/c^2$
	$\chi_{\text{DV}}^2/\text{dof} < 6.0$
	$\text{DIRA}(\text{BPV}) > 0.999$
	$z_{\text{decay}}(D^0) > z_{\text{decay}}(B)$

Figure 5.4: $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ distribution for RS and WS data samples after the offline preselection.

1562 The reconstructed invariant mass of the D^0 -meson candidate is shown in Fig. 5.4
1563 for RS and WS samples after the preselection, with the only additional requirement
1564 that $144.7 \text{ MeV}/c^2 < m_{K\pi\pi\pi_{\text{slow}}} - m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 146.15 \text{ MeV}/c^2$. The RS sample is about
1565 99% pure after the preselection within a signal region corresponding to about
1566 $\pm 3\sigma$ in the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ distribution, while the purity of the WS sample is estimated
1567 to be about 50% using the yield in this region, the observed RS yield and the
1568 known ratio of branching fractions.

1569 5.2.1 Trigger requirements

1570 Stripped candidates are not generally required to come from any particular trigger
 1571 selection. This has implications for the analysis as different trigger selections will
 1572 generally have different acceptances. For example, if an event is recorded exclusively
 1573 by a hadronic trigger signal on one of the D^0 -meson decay products, there is a
 1574 requirement on the transverse energy of one of these decay products, which would
 1575 not be present had the recording of the event been triggered by a different track
 1576 such as the muon. Therefore, requirements are placed on how events are triggered
 1577 to ensure that selection efficiencies are well defined. For the hardware trigger (L0),
 1578 it is required that either the candidate was triggered by the muon, or the trigger is
 1579 independent of the tracks from the B candidate. This ensures the L0 decision is
 1580 not correlated with the D daughter kinematics. For the first stage of the high-level
 1581 trigger (HLT1), it is required that the candidate is triggered on either the muon
 1582 or by any track contributing to the L0 decision (in practice ‘L0 muon’ due to L0
 1583 trigger requirement), or that the HLT1 decision is independent of the B decay.
 1584 Lastly, the second high-level trigger stage (HLT2) is required to be triggered by
 1585 either the single muon trigger or by the topological (requiring a 2, 3, or 4 track
 1586 vertex) triggers. The topological requirements are loosened compared to generic
 1587 topological triggers by requiring a muon in the event. Most candidates (76%) are
 1588 accepted only by the topological lines. A small fraction (4%) of candidates are
 1589 accepted exclusively by the muonic trigger, and the remaining candidates satisfy
 1590 both sets of trigger requirements. Finally, candidates are accepted where the HLT2
 1591 decision is independent of the B decay daughters.

1592 5.3 Offline selection

1593 5.3.1 Multivariate classifier

1594 The purity of the sample is increased further offline using a multivariate classifier,
 1595 which combines many different variables that individually have some power to
 1596 discriminate between signal and background to form a single classifier. A threshold
 1597 can then be placed on the output of this multivariate classifier to make a sample
 1598 with higher purity. The multivariate classifier used is a boosted decision tree (BDT)
 1599 [65, 66], and is trained using 15 variables from each candidate, listed and described
 1600 in Table 5.3. The variables are ordered according to their ability to distinguish

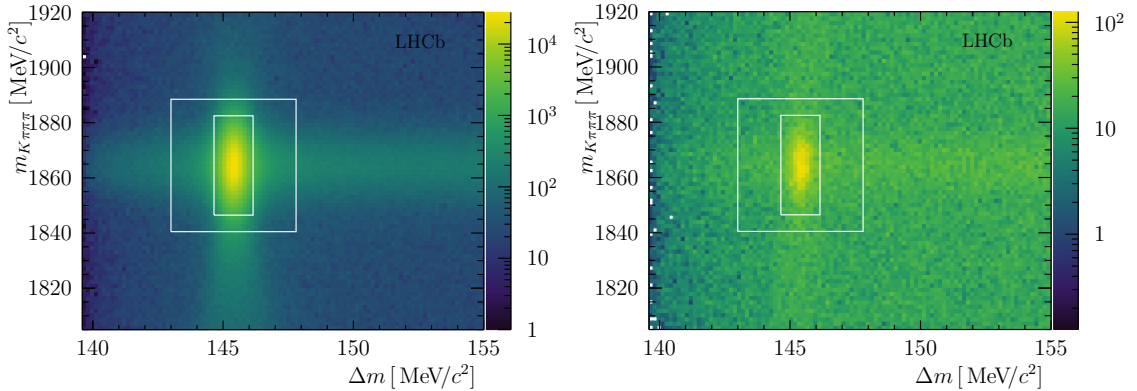


Figure 5.5: Two-dimensional distributions of $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ vs Δm for RS (right) and WS (left) samples prior to the application of the offline selection. The inner box shows the definition of the signal region, while the area outside the outer box shows the definition of the sideband used for studying background.

1601 between the signal and background samples. Notably, kinematic variables pertaining
 1602 to the D^0 daughters are also excluded from the selection to avoid biasing the phase
 1603 space. Particle identification variables of the D^0 daughters are excluded, as applying
 1604 efficiency corrections for these variables requires a data-driven approach that is
 1605 not well suited to the use of a multivariate discriminator. The BDT is trained
 1606 using the 2011 and 2012 RS candidates as the signal sample. The signal candidates
 1607 are required to be in the region:

- 1608 • $1846.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2 < m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 1882.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ and
- 1609 • $144.65 \text{ MeV}/c^2 < \Delta m < 146.15 \text{ MeV}/c^2$.

1610 For the background sample, the WS sidebands are used, with a wider box defined
 1611 to suppress WS signal leaking into the sideband:

- 1612 • $\Delta m < 143.0 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ or $\Delta m > 147.8 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ or
- 1613 • $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 1840.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ or $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} > 1888.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$.

1614 The definition of these regions is shown in the two-dimensional mass plane
 1615 by Fig. 5.5. The sideband region corresponds to about six standard deviations
 1616 of separation from the signal peak in Δm and about four standard deviations in
 1617 $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$. The trigger and PID calibration acceptance requirements are also applied
 1618 to the samples used as a preselection. Half of the sample is used for training,
 1619 the other half for testing, to verify that the BDT is not being over-trained. The

Table 5.3: Variables used in the BDT and their descriptions, ordered by their ability to discriminate between signal and background samples.

Variable	Description
$\log(\text{PL_IPCHI2_OWNPV})$	Logarithm of impact parameter significance of the slow pion with respect to the primary vertex.
$\log(\text{DO_IPCHI2_OWNPV})$	Logarithm of impact parameter significance of D^0 with respect to its associated primary vertex.
$\text{PL_TRACK_GhostProb}$	Ghost track probability of the slow pion.
DO_IP_OWNPV	Impact parameter of the D^0 candidate with respect to its associated primary vertex.
B_ENDVERTEX_CHI2	Fit quality of the B decay vertex (the $D^*\mu$ vertex)
DO_ENDVERTEX_CHI2	Fit quality of the D^0 decay vertex fit (the $K\pi\pi\pi$ vertex).
$\log(\text{B_IPCHI2_OWNPV})$	Logarithm of impact parameter significance of B with respect to its associated primary vertex.
DO_APCOSDIRA	Angle between the reconstructed D^0 momentum and the path implied by its birth and decay vertices. In this case, the D^0 birth vertex is taken to be the $D^*\mu$ vertex.
Mu_PT	Transverse momentum of the muon candidate.
$\text{Mu_TRACK_GhostProb}$	Ghost track probability of the muon candidate.
Mu_PIDmu	Difference in log-likelihoods between the muon and pion mass hypotheses for the muon candidate.
B_OWNPV_CHI2	The fit quality of the primary vertex associated with the B candidate.
$\log(\text{Mu_IPCHI2_OWNPV})$	Logarithm of impact parameter significance of the muon candidate with respect its associated primary vertex.
Mu_IP_OWNPV	Impact parameter of the μ candidate with respect to its associated primary vertex.
DO_ORIVX_CHI2	Fit quality of the $D^{*0}(2010)$ decay vertex fit (the $D^0\pi$ vertex).

1620 signal training and testing samples therefore consist of 540,000 candidates each,
1621 and the corresponding background samples roughly 44,000 candidates each. The
1622 distribution of the BDT response to the signal and background samples is shown in
1623 Fig. 5.6(a), with each split into the testing and training sample. The BDT response
1624 is compatible between each testing and training sample, indicating that the classifier
1625 has not been overtrained. The optimal value for the BDT threshold is tuned to
1626 give maximum significance, $s/\sqrt{s+b}$, of the WS sample. This is determined by
1627 fitting the two dimensional plane $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} : \Delta m$ and scanning in BDT threshold. The
1628 number of signal candidates (s) in the WS sample is estimated using the number of

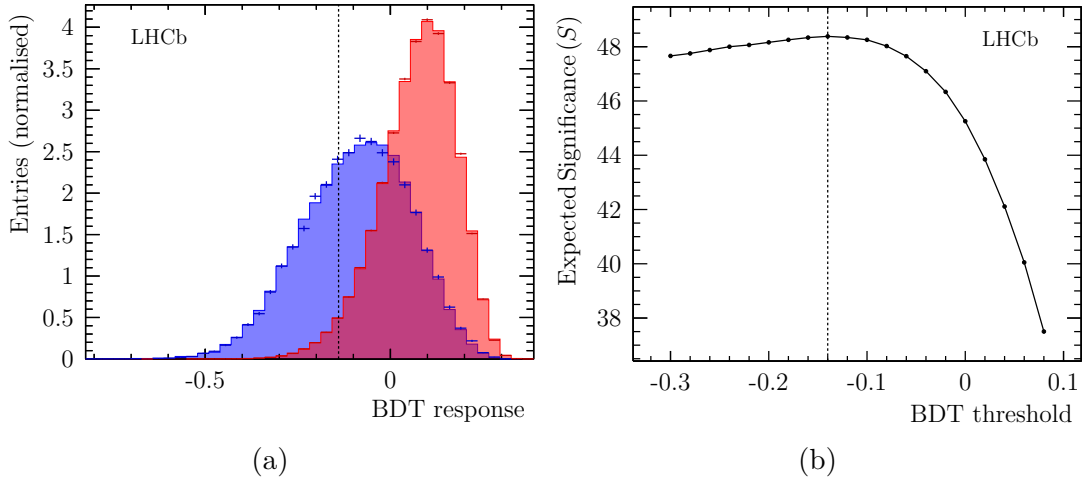


Figure 5.6: (a): Comparison of the BDT response to signal (red) and background (blue) samples, comparing training sample (filled) with testing sample (markers) (b): BDT threshold vs the expected significance (σ) of the WS signal.

1629 signal candidates in the RS sample and the ratio of branching fractions reported
 1630 in the PDG [34]. The number of background candidates (b) in the WS sample
 1631 is taken directly from the fit. These fits are detailed in Sect. 5.5. The expected
 1632 WS significance is shown as a function of the BDT threshold in Fig. 5.6(b). The
 1633 optimal threshold is found to be $\text{BDT} > -0.14$, and at this threshold the WS
 1634 sample consists of 3026 signal candidates at 82% purity. The total WS background
 1635 is 646 ± 12 candidates, where 156 ± 10 are identified as being a RS candidate paired
 1636 with the wrong slow pion, approximately 4% of the total sample. The RS sample
 1637 consists of 890700 ± 927 candidates at 99.96% purity.

1638 5.3.2 Rectangular cuts

1639 A series of rectangular cuts are applied on other variables in addition to cutting on the
 1640 multivariate classifier. Stronger requirements are applied on particle identification
 1641 variables for the kaon in order to reduce cross-feed from the favoured decays
 1642 into the WS sample. These elements of the selection are described in detail in
 1643 Sect.5.4.1. Additionally, requirements are placed on the kinematics of the D^0
 1644 daughters such that they fall in the region where the RICH detectors perform
 1645 well, which is for tracks with momenta between $3 \text{ GeV}/c$ and $100 \text{ GeV}/c$, and to
 1646 have a pseudo-rapidity between 1.5 and 5.

1647 A kinematic fit [67] is applied to the daughters of the D -meson candidate,
 1648 constraining the D -meson mass to its true value. This fit is applied to improve

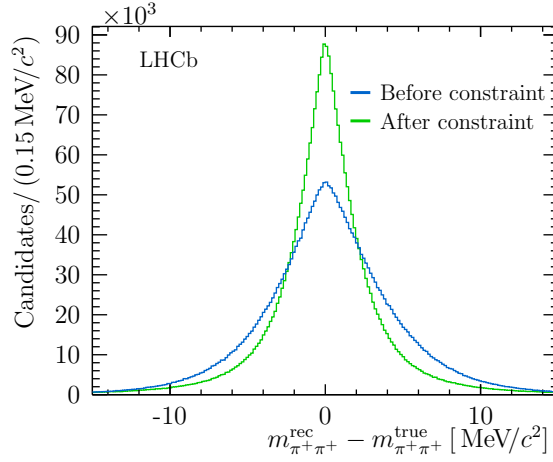


Figure 5.7: Difference between reconstructed and true same-sign dipion invariant-mass. Shown is the difference before and after D^0 mass constraint is applied, and is evaluated using simulated RS decays.

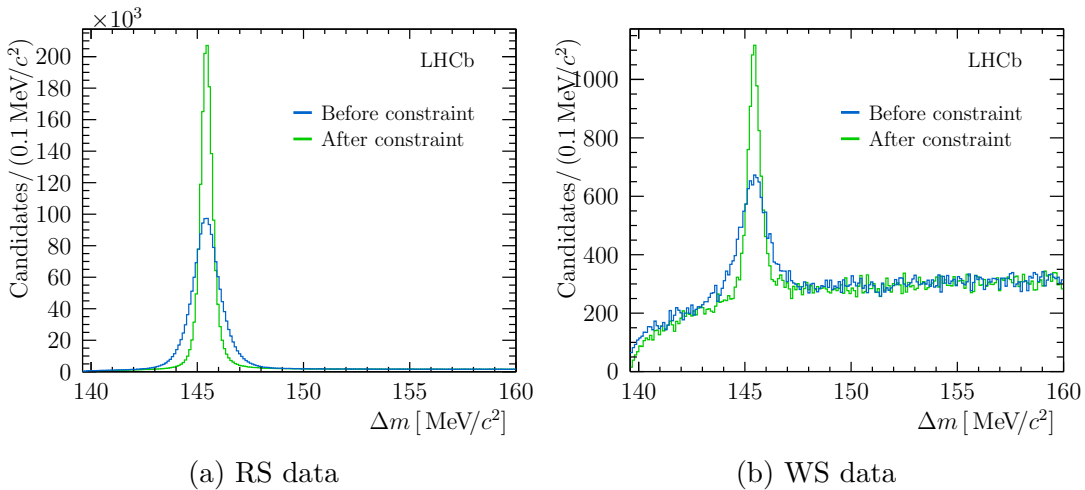


Figure 5.8: Δm distribution in RS and WS data samples before (blue) and after (green) the B vertex constraint is applied.

1649 resolution within the phase space for the amplitude fit. It is required that this fit
 1650 converges ($\chi^2 > 0$). Fig. 5.7 shows the same-sign dipion invariant mass resolution
 1651 before and after the mass constraint is applied. The resolution is improved by
 1652 approximately a factor of two by applying this constraint.

1653 A kinematic fit is also applied to the daughters of the B -meson candidate,
 1654 refitting the track parameters under the hypothesis that they share a common
 1655 vertex (the B decay vertex). This significantly reduces the Δm distribution width,
 1656 which is shown for both RS and WS samples before and after this constraint is
 1657 applied in Fig. 5.8. The only selection applied in each case is the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ signal

1658 window. The narrower Δm distribution allows for a tighter signal window to be
 1659 imposed and therefore greatly improves background rejection.

1660 It is found that more stringent requirement on the ghost track probability
 1661 for the kaon candidate is useful for removing combinatorial background, with
 1662 $P_{\text{ghost}} < 15\%$ found to be the optimal cut. This variable is not included in the BDT
 1663 as it is poorly described in the simulation, and potentially correlated with the
 1664 D -meson phase space.

1665 Multiple candidates will sometimes be found in the same underlying events.
 1666 These candidates are not necessarily statistically independent, for example the
 1667 same track may be common between different candidates. Therefore, only a single
 1668 candidate is selected from each event by randomly selecting one candidate in events
 1669 where there are multiple candidates remaining after the full selection. In practice,
 1670 this only rejects a very small number of candidates, roughly 0.004% of each sample.

1671 5.4 Peaking backgrounds

1672 Sources of peaking background in the RS sample are negligible due to its large
 1673 branching ratio and clean environment in which these samples are reconstructed.
 1674 Several potential sources of peaking background in the WS sample are discussed
 1675 in the following section.

1676 5.4.1 Misidentified backgrounds

1677 A notable peaking background in the WS sample originates in decays that have
 1678 been reconstructed with the correct topology, but where the D -meson daughters
 1679 have been incorrectly identified. One such background originates from the abundant
 1680 favoured decays, where the kaon is misidentified as a pion and a positively charged
 1681 pion is misidentified as a kaon. This is therefore a source of crossfeed from the
 1682 RS decay into the WS sample. As two particle hypotheses are incorrect for this
 1683 variety of background, it is referred to as a *double mis-id*. This background will
 1684 generally be very complicated to model across the phase space, and will also have a
 1685 different acceptance to the signal mode. Hence, further cuts are applied to suppress
 1686 this contamination in the selection. Strong particle identification requirements are
 1687 placed on the kaon, by requiring that the difference in log-likelihoods between the

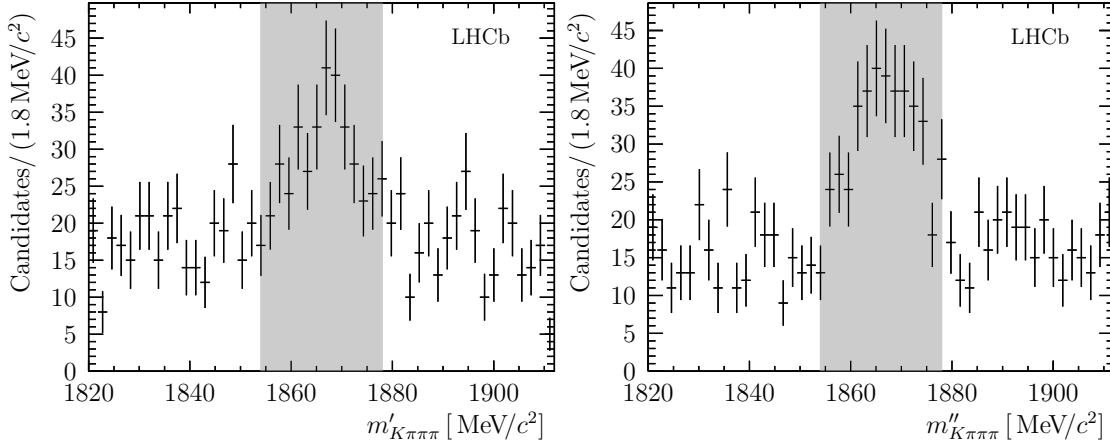


Figure 5.9: $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ shown under exchanging the mass hypothesis of the kaon with a pion. Each plot shows exchange of mass hypothesis of one of the pions of opposite charge to the kaon candidate. Double mis-id background is clearly seen about the nominal D^0 mass. The shaded region shows the area that is vetoed.

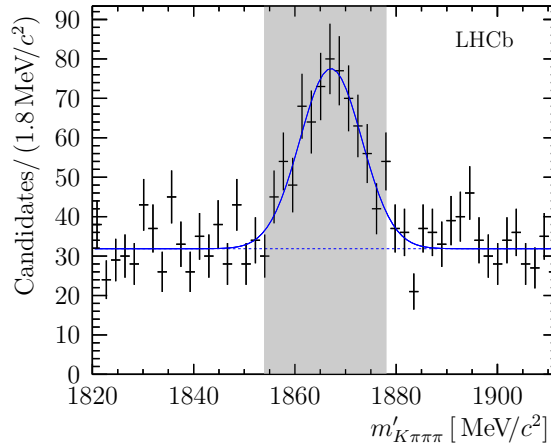


Figure 5.10: $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ shown under exchanging the mass hypothesis of the kaon with a pion, with both possible exchanges folded together. The distribution is fitted in order to estimate the residual contamination from this background after the veto is applied.

1688 kaon and pion mass hypotheses for the kaon candidate is greater than ten. Such a
 1689 requirement is also useful for reducing combinatorial backgrounds, as most particles
 1690 produced from the primary interactions are pions. After this requirement, the kaon
 1691 four-momentum is recalculated assuming the pion mass hypothesis, and one of the
 1692 negatively charged pions with the kaon mass hypothesis. The invariant mass of
 1693 the D meson is then reconstructed under this swapped hypothesis for each of the
 1694 negatively charged pions. The invariant mass spectra for each of these swaps are
 1695 shown in Fig. 5.9, and shows clear peaks at the nominal D -meson mass, indicating
 1696 that there is residual contamination from this background. Therefore, candidates
 1697 falling within $\approx 2\sigma = 12 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ of the nominal D^0 mass are vetoed.

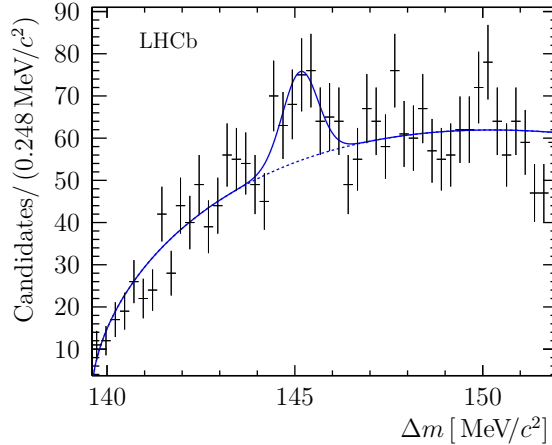


Figure 5.11: Δm in the low sideband of $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ ($m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 1835 \text{ MeV}/c^2$). Also shown is a fit with the Δm threshold function and a single Gaussian function for the broken charm contribution.

1698 The residual contamination from this background is estimated by fitting the
 1699 swapped D^0 masses with a Gaussian function and flat “background” and calculating
 1700 the number of candidates that fall outside the veto window. This fit is shown in
 1701 Fig. 5.10. The estimated number of double mis-IDs prior to the veto is estimated by
 1702 this procedure to be 382 ± 63 . After the veto procedure, it is estimated that there
 1703 are 16 ± 2 candidates originating from decays where a double misidentification has
 1704 occurred. Therefore, an explicit description of this background can be neglected,
 1705 and these candidates are treated as part of the combinatorial background model.

1706 Singly Cabibbo-Suppressed (SCS) decays such as $D^0 \rightarrow K^- K^+ \pi^- \pi^+$, $D^0 \rightarrow$
 1707 $\pi^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ can also potentially contribute via a misidentification of a single particle.
 1708 However, these have negligible contributions within the mass window applied on
 1709 $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$, and candidates are not found near the D^0 if the mass hypothesis of one
 1710 D -meson daughter is swapped. Therefore, no further selection criteria are required.

1711 5.4.2 Broken charm

1712 There is a background from decays where the D^0 has been partially reconstructed
 1713 or daughters have been misidentified, but matched with the correct slow pion. This
 1714 background is referred to as *broken charm*. An example process would be $D^0 \rightarrow$
 1715 $K\pi\eta'(958)[\pi^+\pi^-\gamma]$. This decay will enter into the signal window of $D^0 \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$,
 1716 but will be peaked lower in $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ than true D^0 decays. However, these backgrounds
 1717 will peak in Δm . The Δm distribution at lower $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ masses is shown in Fig. 5.11,
 1718 selecting candidates with $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 1835 \text{ MeV}/c^2$. A small peak is observed at about

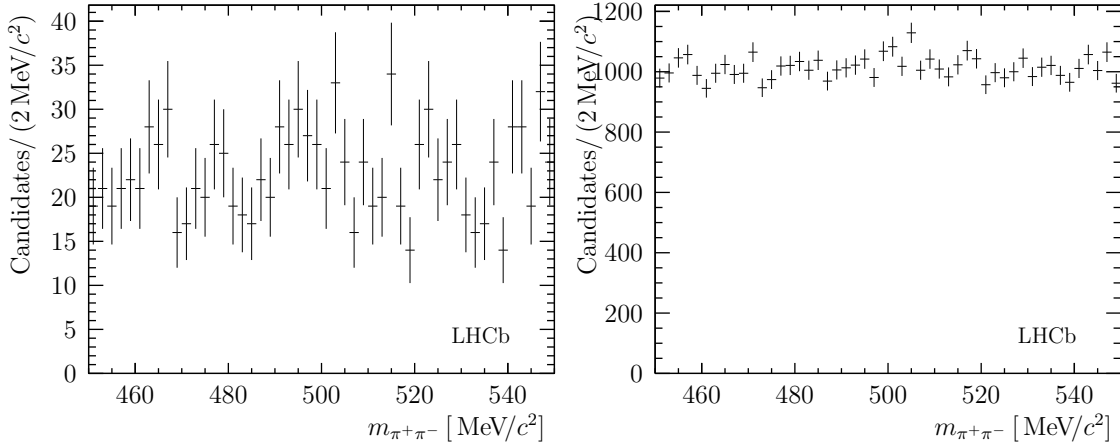


Figure 5.12: Opposite-sign dipion invariant-mass, $m_{\pi^+\pi^-}$, for the WS data sample, around the known K_S^0 mass. Both pairs of opposite sign pions are plotted on the same plot. Left: within the signal region. Right: within the sideband of the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ distribution.

1719 145 MeV/ c^2 , which is consistent with a broken charm background. This distribution
 1720 is fitted with a combination of a single Gaussian function and a threshold function.
 1721 This procedure finds 85 ± 27 candidates in the low-mass sideband. The upper-bound
 1722 on the number of candidates of this category within the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ signal window is then
 1723 estimated by assuming the distribution of broken charm candidates is flat in $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$
 1724 up to the high end of the signal window. This finds an upper bound of 90 ± 25
 1725 candidates. This is an overestimate, as the partially reconstructed background
 1726 will in general be peaked lower in $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$, as opposed to being flat. At the upper
 1727 bound, the fraction of candidates from this source is about 3%, or about 15% of
 1728 the background. An explicit description of this background is therefore neglected,
 1729 and it is included as a part of the description of generic combinatorial background.

1730 5.4.3 $D^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 K^+ \pi^-$

1731 The decay $D^0 \rightarrow K_S^0 K^+ \pi^-$ is singly Cabibbo suppressed, and therefore has a
 1732 branching ratio approximately $10\times$ that of the WS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$. This
 1733 decay can feed into the WS sample if the K_S^0 flight distance is very short or the
 1734 quality of the D^0 decay vertex is poor. The opposite-sign dipion invariant-mass
 1735 should have a narrow peak at the K_S^0 mass ($497.6 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ [34]), therefore this is
 1736 shown in Fig. 5.12 in both the signal region and in the sidebands of the D^0 mass.
 1737 No significant peak is observed as this background is heavily suppressed by vertex
 1738 requirements on the D^0 decay, and hence no further selection requirement is applied.

1739 5.5 Yield extraction

1740 A two-dimensional fit in the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} : \Delta m$ plane is performed simultaneously between
 1741 the RS and WS samples in order to determine signal yields and estimate the residual
 1742 contamination from various sources of background. The plane is shown in Fig. 5.5,
 1743 with boxes indicating the signal and sideband regions. The signal region in which
 1744 yields are extracted is defined as:

- 1745 • $1846.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2 < m_{K\pi\pi\pi} < 1882.5 \text{ MeV}/c^2$,
- 1746 • $144.65 \text{ MeV}/c^2 < \Delta m < 146.15 \text{ MeV}/c^2$.

1747 Three different categories of decays contribute to the sample, and can be distin-
 1748 guished by their distributions in the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} : \Delta m$ plane.

1749 **Signal:** Both the D^* and the D^0 are correctly reconstructed, hence the distributions
 1750 are peaked in both $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ and Δm distributions. This component is modelled
 1751 using a product of two Cruijff functions [68]. The Cruijff function is a
 1752 modified version of a Gaussian, with additional parameters to describe the
 1753 long, asymmetric tails seen in data.

$$1754 \mathcal{P}_S(m_{K\pi\pi\pi}, \Delta m) \propto \exp \left(-\frac{(m_{K\pi\pi\pi} - \mu)^2}{2\sigma^2 + \alpha(m_{K\pi\pi\pi} - \mu)^2} - \frac{(\Delta m - \mu')^2}{2\sigma'^2 + \alpha'(\Delta m - \mu')^2} \right), \quad (5.1)$$

1754 where α' , σ' have different values either side of the mean value:

$$\sigma, \alpha = \begin{cases} \sigma^L, \alpha^L & m < \mu \\ \sigma^R, \alpha^R & m > \mu. \end{cases} \quad (5.2)$$

1755 **Combinatorial:** The reconstructed D -meson is a random combination of tracks,
 1756 and is therefore relatively flat in $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$ and can be modelled by a first-order
 1757 polynomial. In Δm , there is a threshold at the pion mass, therefore this is
 1758 described by a function that explicitly includes this threshold:

$$\mathcal{P}_C(m_{D^0}, \Delta m) \propto (1 + 2pQ)(Q + 1 + pQ^2)^a(1 + bm_{K\pi\pi\pi}), \quad (5.3)$$

1759 where $Q = \Delta m - m_\pi$.

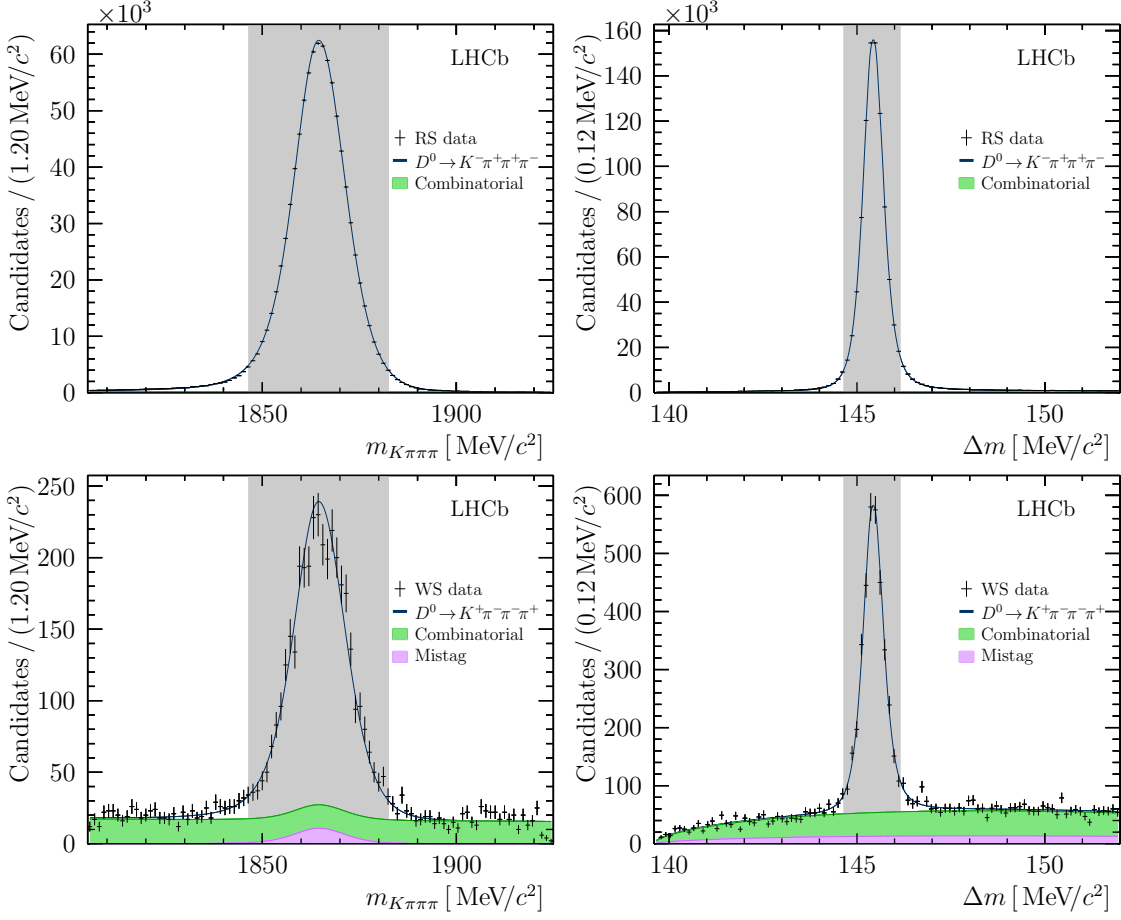


Figure 5.13: Invariant mass and mass difference distributions for RS (top) and WS (bottom) samples, shown with fit projections. The signal region is indicated by the filled grey area, and for each plot the mass window in the orthogonal projection is applied. In each plot, the green area indicates the contribution from combinatorial background.

1760 **Mistag:** The D meson is correctly reconstructed, but paired with a random slow
 1761 pion, so it does not form a good D^* candidate. The distribution can therefore
 1762 be modelled with the same Cruijff function as the signal in $m_{K\pi\pi\pi}$, and a
 1763 threshold function in Δm .

$$\mathcal{P}_W(m_{D^0}, \Delta m) \propto (1 + 2pQ)(Q + 1 + pQ^2)^a \exp\left(-\frac{(m_{K\pi\pi\pi} - \mu)^2}{2\sigma^2 + \alpha(m_{K\pi\pi\pi} - \mu)^2}\right).$$

(5.4)

1764 The individual components are independently normalised, then summed with
 1765 yields and all of the shape parameters floated. The parameters pertaining to
 1766 the signal mode are fixed between the RS and WS samples, and the background
 1767 shapes are allowed to float independently.

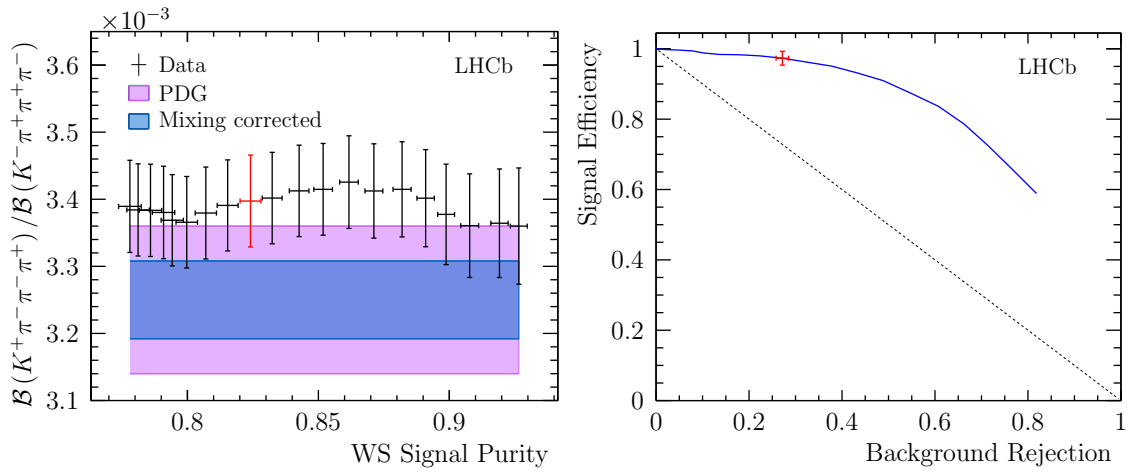


Figure 5.14: Left: Ratio of WS/RS yields as a function of sample purity, obtained by scanning in the requirement on the output of the BDT classifier. The areas show the predicted $\pm 1\sigma$ range taking the ratio of branching from Ref. [34], and from the ratio expected from the D^0 mixing measurement [42] corrected for the decay-time acceptance as described in Sect. 5.6. Right: Background rejection vs signal efficiency relative to the signal and background yields at a BDT cut of -0.2. In both plots, the red marker indicates the values at the optimal requirement of the output of the BDT classifier, which corresponds to -0.14.

1768 The projections of the fit are shown in Fig. 5.13. The fit to the large RS
 1769 sample is imperfect, however, the purpose of the fit is to constrain the signal
 1770 shape in the WS sample, for which the agreement is good. As the background
 1771 contamination in the RS sample is extremely low, a relatively large uncertainty
 1772 on the level of this contamination does not strongly impact upon the amplitude
 1773 fit of this mode presented in the next chapter.

1774 Figure 5.14 shows the ratio of signal yields as a function of signal purity to
 1775 demonstrate that the WS/RS ratio is stable relative to the fit and the selection.
 1776 Several effects, such as efficiency corrections, are not taken into account here,
 1777 which can affect the WS and RS differently. The expected ratio is corrected
 1778 for $D^0 \bar{D}^0$ mixing and the decay time acceptance, as described in Sect.5.6, and
 1779 is shown as a blue band. The PDG value of the ratio is shown as a red band.
 1780 The efficiency as a function of background rejection is also shown. The nominal
 1781 working point is selected to be the point where the significance is maximised. This
 1782 corresponds to a BDT cut of -0.14 .

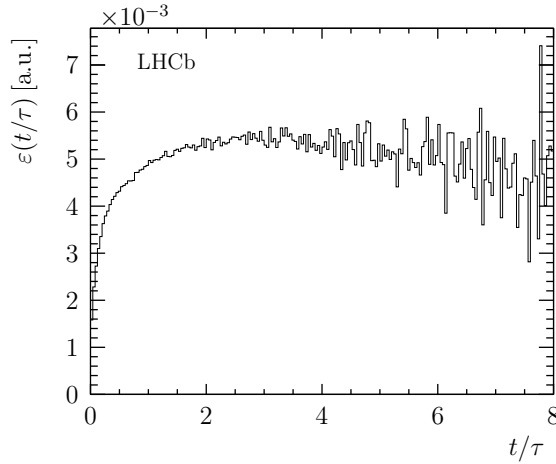


Figure 5.15: Decay time acceptance of RS decays as a function of D^0 candidate proper decay time, taken from 2011 + 2012 RS data sample. The lifetime is calculated constraining the $D^0\mu\pi_s$ vertex. The histogram is normalised to unit area.

5.6 Mixing correction

1783

1784 The WS/RS ratio varies as a function of time due to mixing. The estimate of this
 1785 ratio integrated over time must therefore be corrected for the acceptance as a function
 1786 of decay time. The dependence is approximated up to second order in time by:

$$R(t) = (r_{K3\pi})^2 - R_{K3\pi} (y \cos(\delta_{K3\pi}) - x \sin(\delta_{K3\pi})) \frac{t}{\tau} + (x^2 + y^2) \frac{t^2}{\tau^2}, \quad (5.5)$$

1787 where (x, y) are the charm mixing parameters and $(R_{K3\pi}, \delta_{K3\pi}, r_{K3\pi})$ the hadronic
 1788 parameters of the $D^0 \rightarrow K\pi\pi\pi$ decay. The values of the parameters and the
 1789 correlations between them are taken from the mixing constrained fit in Ref. [42].
 1790 The proper D^0 decay time, τ is taken from the PDG [34] as 0.4101 ± 0.0015 ps,
 1791 and the uncertainty on the decay time is assumed to have a negligible effect on the
 1792 corrected time integrated WS/RS ratio. The decay time acceptance is estimated
 1793 using the combined 2011 and 2012 RS data sample. It is assumed that the true
 1794 RS decay time distribution is distributed exponentially according to the proper
 1795 decay time. It is also assumed that the decay time acceptance between RS and
 1796 WS decay modes is identical. The estimated decay time acceptance function is
 1797 shown in Fig. 5.15. The acceptance is reduced at low decay times due to selection
 1798 requirements involving the impact parameters of tracks, as these variables are
 1799 strongly correlated with the decay time. The acceptance corrected time integrated
 1800 WS/RS ratio is therefore given by:

$$R = \int dt \varepsilon(t) \frac{1}{\tau} e^{-t/\tau} R(t) = (3.26 \pm 0.06) \times 10^{-3}, \quad (5.6)$$

1801 where $\varepsilon(t)$ is estimated from the histogram in Fig. 5.15. The time integrated ratio
 1802 without acceptance corrections is given in Ref. [42] as

$$R = (3.22 \pm 0.05) \times 10^{-3}. \quad (5.7)$$

1803 Therefore, there is a slightly less than 1σ shift upwards in the time integrated
 1804 WS/RS ratio due to decay time acceptance, and hence the WS sample should
 1805 be relatively typical of decay-time integrated decays. Additionally, the WS/RS
 1806 ratio at zero decay-time is $(3.014 \pm 0.066) \times 10^{-3}$, the amplitudes for which only
 1807 contain the pure Cabibbo-suppressed/favoured processes. It is inferred from this
 1808 that the dominant contribution to the time-integrated WS sample is from the
 1809 doubly Cabibbo-suppressed amplitude, with the corrections from mixing effects
 1810 only having a small impact.

1811 5.7 Phase-space acceptance

1812 In order to study the two amplitudes, variations in the acceptance across the
 1813 phase space due to detector effects and the various stages of the reconstruction
 1814 must be accounted for. These effects are studied using large samples of simulated
 1815 events of both WS and RS decay modes, with preliminary models for both signal
 1816 modes used to generate the D^0 decay. Samples with both neutral and charged
 1817 B -mesons are generated, as decay chains from both of these contribute significantly
 1818 to each sample. A variety of detector conditions are simulated such that the
 1819 simulated events accurately match those in data. The underlying pp event is
 1820 simulated under both 7 and 8 TeV energies with both 2011 and 2012 conditions.
 1821 Additionally, the detector response is simulated under both magnet up and magnet
 1822 down configurations, in order to match the real data taking conditions. This
 1823 leads to 16 different simulation samples, with the different configurations and the
 1824 number of events generated for each detailed in Table 5.4. Twice the number of
 1825 RS events are generated as WS, leading to a simulated sample of roughly 6 million
 1826 RS candidates and roughly 3 million WS candidates.

1827 The same reconstruction and selection chain is applied to the simulated samples
 1828 as the data samples, with the exception of particle identification variables associated
 1829 with the daughters of the D -meson candidate. These variables rely heavily on
 1830 the RICH detectors, the response of which is poorly described in the simulation,
 1831 and hence a data-driven reweighting technique[69] is applied to correct for these
 1832 aspects of the selection requirements.

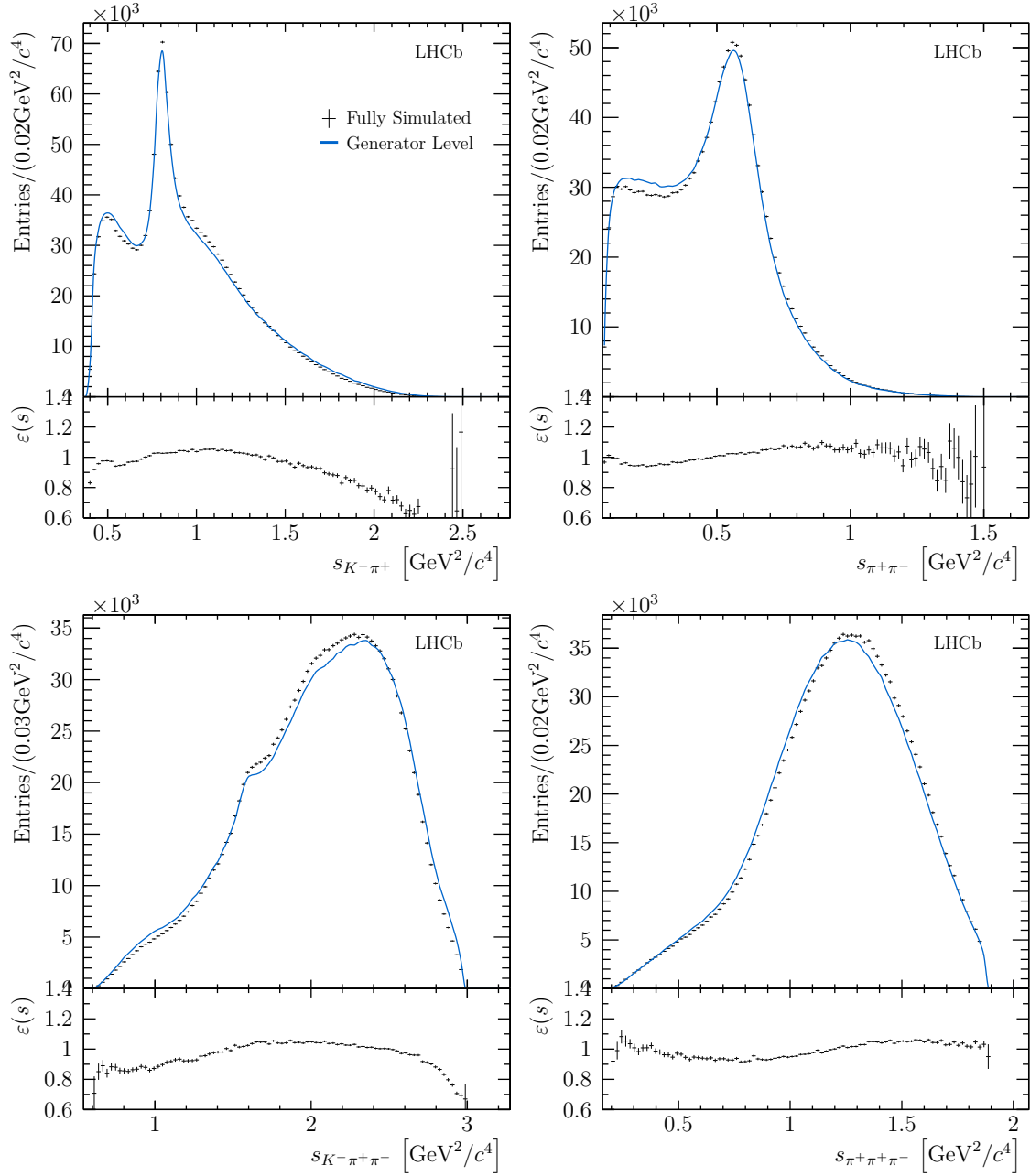


Figure 5.16: Comparison of invariant-mass distributions for the RS mode between fully simulated events with the full selection applied (shown with points) and events at the generator level. Also shown is the ratio of the two distributions.

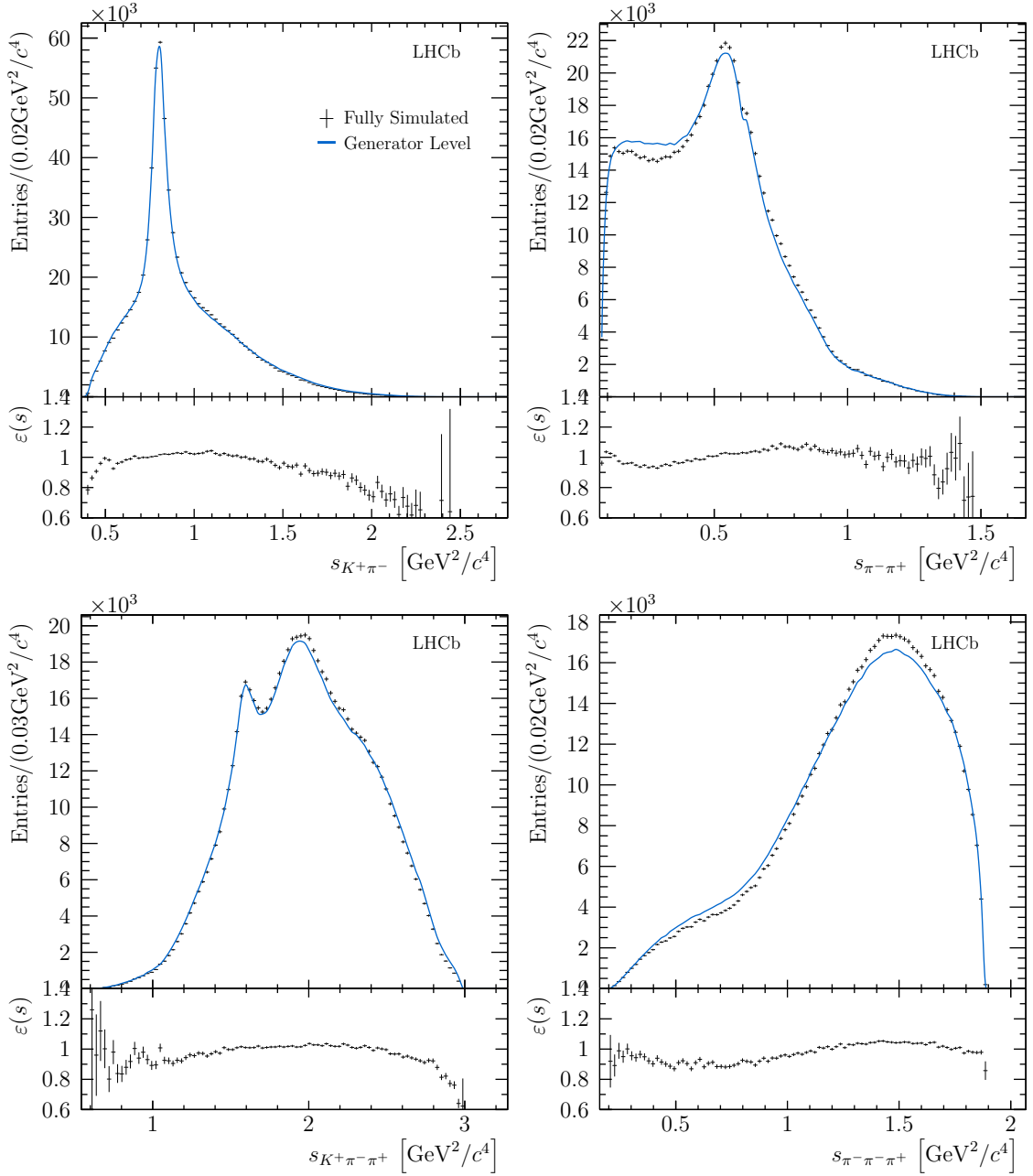


Figure 5.17: Comparison of invariant-mass distributions for the WS mode between fully simulated events with the full selection applied (shown with points) and events at the generator level. Also shown is the ratio of the two distributions.

Table 5.4: Summary of MC samples. The quoted number of candidates is after online / stripping selection only.

Event Type	Year	Polarity	Candidates
$B^0 \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ [D^0 [K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-] \pi^+] \mu^- X$	2011	Up	487280
		Down	480360
	2012	Up	962690
		Down	997384
$B^0 \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ [D^0 [K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+] \pi^+] \mu^- X$	2011	Up	251424
		Down	264763
	2012	Up	467375
		Down	482520
$B^- \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ [D^0 [K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-] \pi^+] \mu^- X$	2011	Up	590189
		Down	532355
	2012	Up	1087148
		Down	1036920
$B^- \rightarrow D^*(2010)^+ [D^0 [K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+] \pi^+] \mu^- X$	2011	Up	288183
		Down	286721
	2012	Up	529118
		Down	524067
Total $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$			3094171
Total $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$			6174326

1833 The scale of the variation in acceptance across the phase-space can be esti-
1834 mated by comparing the distributions of candidates after the full selection to the
1835 distribution the events were generated with. Various distributions are therefore
1836 compared between the fully simulated samples, and samples of events that have
1837 not been propagated through the detector simulation or selection process. This is
1838 shown for four different invariant-mass distributions for the RS and WS simulated
1839 samples in Fig. 5.16 and Fig. 5.17, showing both the distributions superimposed
1840 and the ratio of the two distributions. The deviations are relatively small, with a
1841 maximal deviation of about 30% in the edges of the phase space. The effect of the
1842 non-uniformity of the phase-space acceptance is included in amplitude models using
1843 these simulated events, using a technique that is described in Sect. 7.1.1.

1844 **5.8 Summary**

Table 5.5: Signal and background yields for both samples in the signal region, presented separately for each data-taking year.

	Yield		
	Signal	Combinatorial Background	Mistag Background
$D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$			
2011	$266\,368 \pm 490$	977 ± 10	—
2012	$624\,332 \pm 765$	2475 ± 19	—
Total	$890\,701 \pm 927$	3452 ± 24	—
$D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$			
2011	875 ± 32	151 ± 3	47 ± 6
2012	2154 ± 51	340 ± 5	108 ± 9
Total	3028 ± 61	491 ± 7	155 ± 11

1845 The final yields of the selection used in the amplitude analysis presented in the
1846 later chapters of this thesis are shown in Table 5.5, dividing the samples by data-
1847 taking year. The WS sample has a purity of about 82% for 3000 signal candidates,
1848 with about a quarter of the background being the result of mistagged favoured
1849 decays. The RS sample consists of almost 900,000 signal candidates, with a
1850 purity in excess of 99.9%.

6

The Isobar Model

Contents

1854		
1855	6.1 Two-body isobars	91
1856	6.1.1 Relativistic Breit-Wigner	91
1857	6.1.2 K matrix	92
1858	6.2 Covariant tensor formalism	99
1859	6.2.1 Comparing formalisms	101
1860	6.2.2 Parity	104
1861	6.3 Three-body isobars	105
1862	6.4 Quasi model-independent formalism	108
1863	6.5 Matrix elements	109
1864	6.6 AmpGen framework	110
1865	6.6.1 Decay descriptors	112

The amplitudes for a multi-body process can be described in terms of a series of quasi-independent two-body processes. These two-body processes are often referred to as *isobars* and this approximation the *isobar model*. The isobar model has typically been used in describing the three-body decays of pseudoscalars. This is shown pictorially in Fig. 6.1. The isobar can be modelled by a variety of dynamical functions, which are outlined in Sect. 6.1. These dynamical functions describe strong two-body final state interactions (FSI). Typically, the isobar is associated to an intermediate resonance that couples to the two final state particles, and the three-body decay proceeds via a coupling between the initial state, the resonance and the bachelor particle. Higher order topologies that involve interactions between the bachelor and the two final state particles of the isobar are assumed to be

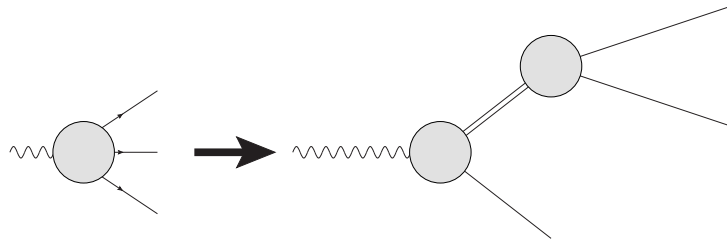
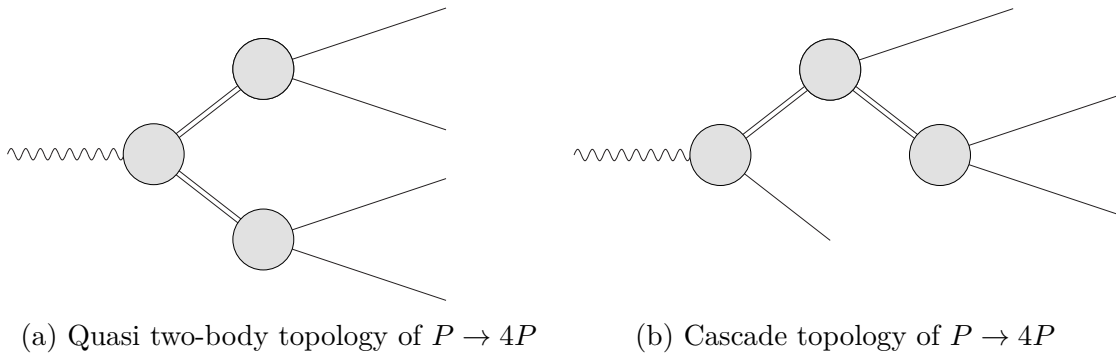
Figure 6.1: Pictorial representation of the isobar model description of the process $P \rightarrow 3P$ (a) Quasi two-body topology of $P \rightarrow 4P$ (b) Cascade topology of $P \rightarrow 4P$

Figure 6.2: Isobar diagrams for four body decays

1880 negligible. These effects are collectively referred to as *re-scattering*. For each of
 1881 the dynamical functions that are described in this section, a general overview of
 1882 the physical considerations that go into the system are described, followed by
 1883 specific choices that are made for the amplitude analyses of the decay modes studied
 1884 in the next chapter. In particular, several simplifying assumptions are made to
 1885 parameterisations in order to reduce the number of degrees of freedom of the system.

1886 Within the approximations of the isobar model, it is straightforward to extend
 1887 the formalism to include four-body final states, by generalising one of the final-state
 1888 particles to a second isobar. This gives rise to two distinct decay topologies. The
 1889 *quasi two-body* topology is shown in Fig. 6.2(a). The initial state decays via a pair of
 1890 isobars, each of which in turn decays to two particles. The *cascade* topology is shown
 1891 in Fig. 6.2(b). The initial state decays via an isobar and a stable particle, with the
 1892 isobar then decaying to three particles via a second isobar and a stable state. Both
 1893 isobars will in principle carry spin, therefore the description of polarisation and
 1894 angular momentum is significantly more complicated than in the three body case.
 1895 A general, covariant approach is adopted, and is described in detail in Sect. 6.2. For
 1896 the cascade topology, there is an additional complexity from one of the daughters
 1897 of the first isobar also being an unstable state. The dynamical functions required
 1898 to describe such a system are developed in Sect. 6.3. A complementary approach to
 1899 explicitly parameterising the dynamics of one of the quasi two-body systems is to

1900 perform a quasi-model-independent partial-wave analysis. This replaces one or more
 1901 of the dynamical functions used in the fit with a flexible parametrisation that can
 1902 describe a wide variety of shapes. The formalism for performing such an analysis
 1903 is described in Sect. 6.4. Section 6.5 discusses how these different components are
 1904 combined to describe the matrix elements for four-body processes. Section 6.6 gives
 1905 a brief introduction to how amplitudes are computed in practice, in particular the
 1906 large size of the RS sample and the relatively complicated nature of the amplitudes
 1907 presents a significant computational challenge.

1908 6.1 Two-body isobars

1909 Isobars that couple a pair of stable particles are described using two different
 1910 parameterisations. Narrow, isolated resonant states can be described using the
 1911 relativistic Breit-Wigner function, which is discussed in Sect. 6.1.1. This is generally
 1912 the case for vector and tensor states. For scalar states, there are typically multiple
 1913 broad overlapping resonances, in addition to significant non-resonant scattering
 1914 amplitudes between the constituent particles of the state. Such a system can be
 1915 described by the K-matrix formalism, with is discussed in Sect. 6.1.2.

1916 6.1.1 Relativistic Breit-Wigner

1917 Narrow, isolated resonances can be described using the relativistic Breit-Wigner
 1918 amplitude, which has the form

$$\mathcal{T}(s, q) = \frac{B_L(q, 0)\sqrt{k}}{m_0^2 - s - im_0\Gamma(s, q)}, \quad (6.1)$$

1919 where m_0 is the pole mass of the decaying particle, s is the invariant mass squared
 1920 of the isobar, and q is the momentum transfer, defined as the linear momentum of
 1921 either decay product in the rest frame of the isobar. An amplitude with $L \geq 1$ is
 1922 dampened at large momentum transfers by the normalised Blatt-Weisskopf form
 1923 factor, $B_L(q, 0)$, which accounts for the finite extent of the decaying meson [70].
 1924 These form factors also enhance the amplitude for the decay of a finite sized
 1925 state near to the kinematic threshold, when compared to the equivalent process
 1926 of a point-like particle. The total matrix elements, including spin factors, still
 1927 vanish as $q \rightarrow 0$ for decays with orbital angular momentum due to the explicit
 1928 momentum-scale dependence that naturally emerges from the covariant tensor

Table 6.1: The Blatt-Weisskopf factors for low orbital angular momentum states. The Blatt-Weisskopf radius, d , characterises the interaction radius of the constituent hadrons [70]. The second argument of the Blatt-Weisskopf function, q_0 , is the momentum at which the form factor is normalised to unity.

L	$B_L(q, q_0)$
0	1
1	$\sqrt{\frac{1 + q_0^2 d^2}{1 + q^2 d^2}}$
2	$\sqrt{\frac{(q_0^2 d^2 - 3)^2 + 9q_0^2 d^2}{(q^2 d^2 - 3)^2 + 9q^2 d^2}}$

1929 formalism. The normalisation constant, k , approximately normalises the Breit-
 1930 Wigner function, ignoring effects from the form-factors and running widths. This
 1931 de-correlates the coupling parameters of a resonance from the lineshape parameters,
 1932 the mass and width, and hence improves the stability of fits that include such
 1933 parameters. The normalisation constant is

$$k = \frac{2\sqrt{2}m_0\Gamma\gamma}{\pi\sqrt{m_0^2 + \gamma}} \quad (6.2)$$

$$\gamma = m_0\sqrt{m_0^2 + \Gamma^2}.$$

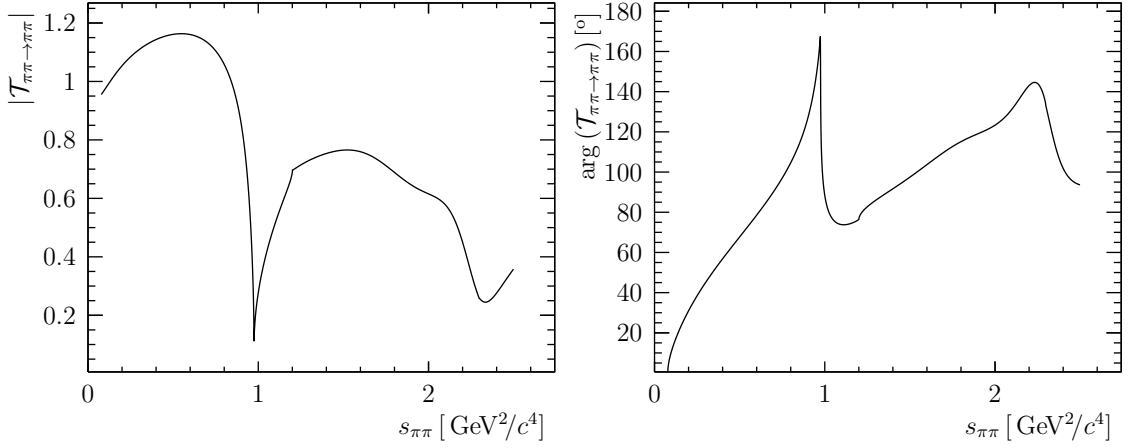
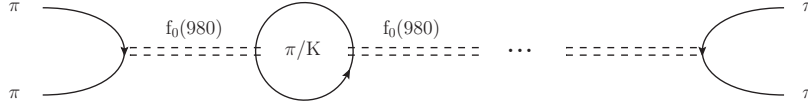
1934 The width of the Breit-Wigner, $\Gamma(s, q)$, when the resonance can only decay via
 1935 a single channel to a quasi two-body final state is

$$\Gamma(s, q) = \frac{\Gamma_0 q m_0 q^{2L}}{q_0 \sqrt{s} q_0^{2L}} B_L(q, q_0), \quad (6.3)$$

1936 where q_0 is the linear momentum of either decay product evaluated at the pole
 1937 mass of the resonance.

1938 6.1.2 K matrix

1939 An example of an amplitude that is not well-described by simple resonant contri-
 1940 butions is that of isoscalar $\pi\pi \rightarrow \pi\pi$ scattering, and is shown in Fig. 6.3. The
 1941 first known resonance in this system is the $f_0(980)$ at about $1 \text{ GeV}/c^2$. Rather
 1942 than a resonance peak being observed at this mass, the amplitude is found to
 1943 rapidly decrease. Two different effects result in this amplitude: firstly a non-
 1944 resonant scattering amplitude destructively interferes with the resonant contribution.
 1945 Secondly, the $f_0(980)$ strongly couples to the KK final state, and hence this *coupled*

Figure 6.3: Transition amplitude and phase of $\pi\pi \rightarrow \pi\pi$ scattering.Figure 6.4: Pictorial representation of the contributions from $\pi\pi$, KK to the $f_0(980)$ propagator.

1946 *channel* also plays an important role in determining the $\pi\pi$ amplitude. At higher
 1947 masses, further resonances are present such as the $f_0(1370)$, and further coupled final
 1948 states such as 4π become important. This system is not well described by a simple
 1949 sum of resonant contributions, in particular this approach can violate constraints
 1950 from unitarity. An alternative to the simple sum of resonant contributions is the K-
 1951 matrix formalism, which is constructed to preserve coupled-channel unitarity in the
 1952 presence of overlapping resonances. A detailed discussion of the formalism is outside
 1953 the scope of this thesis, but an excellent introduction is given in Ref. [71]. The key
 1954 result is that the transition matrix of a scattering process \mathcal{T} can be expressed as:

$$\mathcal{T} = (I - i\hat{\rho}\hat{K})^{-1} \hat{K}, \quad (6.4)$$

1955 where \hat{K} is a real, symmetric matrix of rank the number of coupled channels
 1956 considered, known as the *K matrix*. The K matrix is built from a series of real
 1957 pole terms that generate the resonant content of the system, and polynomial terms
 1958 that describe non-resonant scattering between hadrons. Within the assumptions of
 1959 the isobar model, the K matrix provides a universal description of hadron-hadron
 1960 interactions. The phase-space density matrix, $\hat{\rho}$, is a diagonal matrix with elements
 1961 the phase-space density of a given channel.

1962 It is instructive to consider the transition amplitude associated with a single
 1963 pole term and a pair of coupled channels. This is approximately the case for the

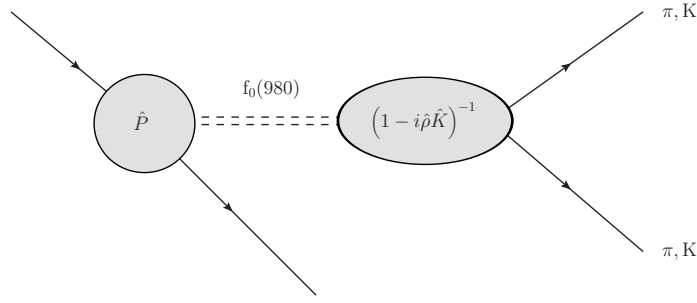


Figure 6.5: Pictorial representation of the production-vector formalism

1964 $f_0(980)$, where the coupled channels to consider are $\pi\pi$ and KK . In this example,
 1965 the K matrix is a 2×2 matrix with a single pole,

$$K_{ij} = \frac{g_i g_j}{m^2 - s}, \quad (6.5)$$

1966 where m is the pole mass and g_i, g_j characterise the strength of the coupling between
 1967 channels i, j and the pole. The transition amplitude for $\pi\pi \rightarrow \pi\pi$ becomes,

$$\mathcal{T}_{11} = \frac{g_1^2 - i\rho_2 g_2^2}{m^2 - s - i(g_1^2 \rho_1(s) + g_2^2 \rho_2(s))}, \quad (6.6)$$

1968 where ρ_1, ρ_2 are the elements of the phase-space density matrix for channels 1, 2.
 1969 This amplitude is known as the Flattè [72], and has the same form as the Breit-
 1970 Wigner but with a total width including contributions from both pion and kaon
 1971 final states. Figure. 6.4 shows a simple picture of the physical interpretation of
 1972 this formalism, where pion and kaon loops are responsible for generating the finite
 1973 width of the resonance. When resonances are isolated but multiple coupled channels
 1974 play a role, the amplitude has the form of a Breit-Wigner but with a total width
 1975 integrating over all possible final states. The formulation of the running width
 1976 for three-body final states described in Sect. 6.3 can be considered as the limit of
 1977 this formalism in the presence of infinite coupled-channels.

1978 The K-matrix prescription described thus far in this chapter deals strictly
 1979 with scattering amplitudes. The amplitudes considered in this thesis deal with
 1980 the production rather than scattering processes, which can be described in the
 1981 production vector, or P-vector formalism. A simple picture of the production vector
 1982 formalism is shown in Fig. 6.5. The initial state couples to a K-matrix pole, in this
 1983 example the $f_0(980)$ ¹, and some other final state. The pole is then propagated

¹This is an oversimplification, as the poles of the K matrix are not associated with physical resonances such as $f_0(980)$, but rather the poles of the T matrix are those that have physical significance

1984 using the K matrix into the final state, in this example either $\pi\pi$ or KK . The
 1985 initial state is coupled to the K-matrix pole with some coupling strength β , and
 1986 then the elements of the production vector \hat{P} can be written as:

$$P_i = \frac{\beta g_i}{m^2 - s}. \quad (6.7)$$

1987 There is not a unique prescription for the construction of the production vector,
 1988 however, it should have the same pole structure as the K matrix itself, such that
 1989 the amplitude does not vanish at the K-matrix poles. The production amplitude
 1990 \mathcal{F} can then be written in terms of the P vector as

$$\mathcal{F} = (I - i\hat{\rho}\hat{K})^{-1} \hat{P}. \quad (6.8)$$

1991 If there are multiple poles, the P-vector becomes the sum over the poles with
 1992 different coupling strengths β_i for each pole. When resonances are well separated,
 1993 the production vector approach tends toward the usual coherent sum of Breit-
 1994 Wigners, and hence that approach is normally justified when describing vector
 1995 and tensor degrees of freedom.

1996 $\pi\pi$ S-wave

1997 For the $\pi\pi$ S-wave, the amplitude is constructed by considering five coupled channels:
 1998 $\pi\pi$, $K\bar{K}$, $\pi\pi\pi\pi$, $\eta\eta$ and $\eta\eta'$. Therefore, it can be described by a 5×5 K matrix.
 1999 The following parametrisation of the K matrix is commonly used [73]

$$\hat{K}_{ij} = f(s) \left(\sum_{\alpha} \frac{g_i^{\alpha} g_j^{\alpha}}{m_{\alpha}^2 - s} + f_{ij}^{scatt} \frac{1 \text{ GeV}^2 - s_0^{scatt}}{s - s_0^{scatt}} \right), \quad (6.9)$$

2000 where the sum over α is a sum over five poles. These poles then generate at
 2001 least five poles in the transition matrix, which are usually associated with the
 2002 $f_0(980)$, $f_0(1300)$, $f_0(1500)$, $f_0(1750)$, $f_0(1200 - 1600)$ resonances. In addition to
 2003 the pole terms, the terms in f_{ij}^{scatt} describe slowly varying scattering contributions.
 2004 An unphysical kinematic singularity occurs below the $\pi\pi$ production threshold,
 2005 sometimes referred to as the Adler zero [74]. The term $f(s)$ suppresses this
 2006 singularity, and has the form

$$f(s) = \frac{1 \text{ GeV}^2/c^4 - s_{A_0}}{s - s_{A_0}} \left(s - s_A \frac{m_{\pi}^2}{2} \right), \quad (6.10)$$

2007 where the singularity to suppress is at $\sqrt{s} = \sqrt{\frac{s_A}{2}} m_{\pi} \approx 0.1 \text{ GeV}/c^2$, and the first
 2008 term is a relatively arbitrary factor that smooths the behaviour of this function, with

2009 $s_{A_0} = -0.15 \text{ GeV}^2/c^4$. All parameters in the K matrix can be fixed from scattering
 2010 data, with values taken from Ref. [73]. The process-specific production-vector \hat{P}
 2011 has the same pole structure as the K matrix, such that the physical amplitude does
 2012 not necessarily vanish at the K-matrix poles, and can be written as

$$\hat{P}_i = \sum_{\alpha} \frac{\beta_{\alpha} g_i^{\alpha}}{m_{\alpha}^2 - s} + f_i^{\text{prod}} \frac{1 \text{ GeV}^2 - s_0^{\text{prod}}}{s - s_0^{\text{prod}}}. \quad (6.11)$$

2013 This production vector therefore includes both couplings to K-matrix poles, with
 2014 the strength of the coupling parametrised by β , and direct couplings to the different
 2015 channels in the K matrix, which is parametrised by couplings f_i^{prod} and a slowly
 2016 varying polynomial term. These couplings are in general complex, and hence the
 2017 generic $\pi\pi$ S-wave has 20 degrees of freedom.

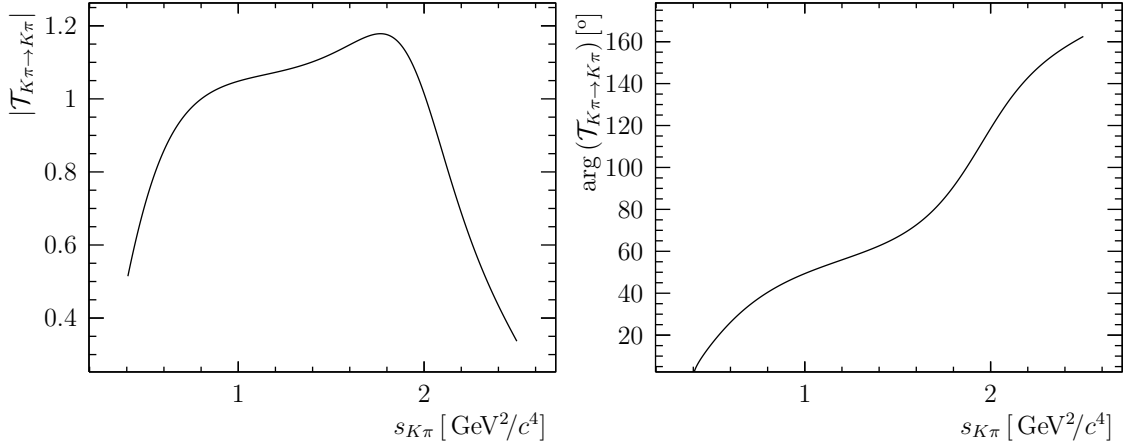
2018 This presents a problem for four-body amplitude analyses presented in this
 2019 thesis, as there are multiple production modes for the $\pi\pi$ S-wave. For example, the
 2020 production mechanism $D^0 \rightarrow K^{*0}[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$ will have a different set of couplings to
 2021 $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}\pi^+$. This results in far too many degrees of freedom, and
 2022 therefore the following approximations are made to the P-vector:

- 2023 1. Couplings to poles three, four and five result in small amplitudes within the
 2024 D^0 decay phase-space, and would require very large production terms to have
 2025 significant impact within the phase-space, and hence are fixed to zero.
- 2026 2. Only a direct coupling to one channel other than $\pi\pi$ is considered, which is
 2027 KK as this has the strongest effect within the phase-space.

2028 This choice reduces the number of free parameters per production mode to eight,
 2029 which is then tractable. It is noted that the effects of the other channels and poles
 2030 are still included in the K matrix, but the direct coupling to them is assumed to
 2031 have small contributions inside the phase space.

2032 $K\pi$ S-wave

2033 The $K\pi$ $I = 1/2$ S-wave up to $\approx 1.5 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ contains both a non-resonant scattering
 2034 amplitude and the first 0^+ excitation of the kaon, the $K^*(1430)$. The amplitude
 2035 and phase of the scattering amplitude are shown in Fig. 6.6. The phase rises
 2036 slowly up to $\approx 1.2 \text{ GeV}/c^2$, which is mostly due to the scattering amplitude and
 2037 the onset of interference between this amplitude and the resonant contribution.

Figure 6.6: The $K\pi$ $I = 1/2$ S-wave scattering amplitude.

2038 Above $1.2 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ the phase rises more rapidly due to the $K^*(1430)$ resonance. At
 2039 $\approx 1.5 \text{ GeV}/c^2$, other channels such as $K\eta'$ open up and the inelasticity starts to
 2040 become more important. This system can also be described using a K matrix,
 2041 consisting of a pair of channels, $K\pi$ and $K\eta'$, where the latter should be considered
 2042 an effective inelastic channel. The K-matrix elements are written as:

$$K_{ij} = \frac{s - s_{0\frac{1}{2}}}{s_{norm}} \left(\frac{g_i g_j}{s_1 - s} + C_{ij0} + C_{ij1} \tilde{s} + C_{ij2} \tilde{s}^2 \right), \quad (6.12)$$

2043 where the pole $s_1 = 1.7919 \text{ GeV}^2/c^4$, which generates the $K^*(1430)$ resonance. The
 2044 second-order polynomial terms C_{ijx} describe the non-resonant scattering contri-
 2045 bution. Similar to the $K\pi$ S-wave, a kinematic singularity at $s_{0\frac{1}{2}} \approx 0.23 \text{ GeV}^2/c^4$
 2046 is removed explicitly. This parametrisation is taken from a study of the $K^-\pi^+$
 2047 contribution to $D^+ \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+$ in the amplitude analysis performed by the FOCUS
 2048 collaboration of this channel [75]. In that analysis, the K-matrix parameters were
 2049 fitted to a combination of $K\pi \rightarrow K\pi$ scattering data from the LASS experiment,
 2050 with additional constraints from Chiral perturbation theory used to extend the
 2051 amplitude to threshold.

2052 There is also an $I = 3/2$ scattering amplitude in addition to the $I = 1/2$
 2053 amplitude that contributes to the general $K\pi$ S wave. As no resonant contributions
 2054 are expected with this isospin, and no known sources of inelasticity, the K matrix
 2055 contains only a scattering component, and can be written as:

$$K_{3/2} = \frac{s - s_{0\frac{3}{2}}}{s_{norm}} \left(D_{110} + D_{111} \tilde{s} + D_{112} \tilde{s}^2 \right), \quad (6.13)$$

2056 where all parameters are also taken from Ref. [75]. The amplitude and phase for
 2057 this component are shown in Fig. 6.7, and are slowly varying up to $\approx 1.5 \text{ GeV}/c^2$.
 2058 The amplitude is not well known above this energy.

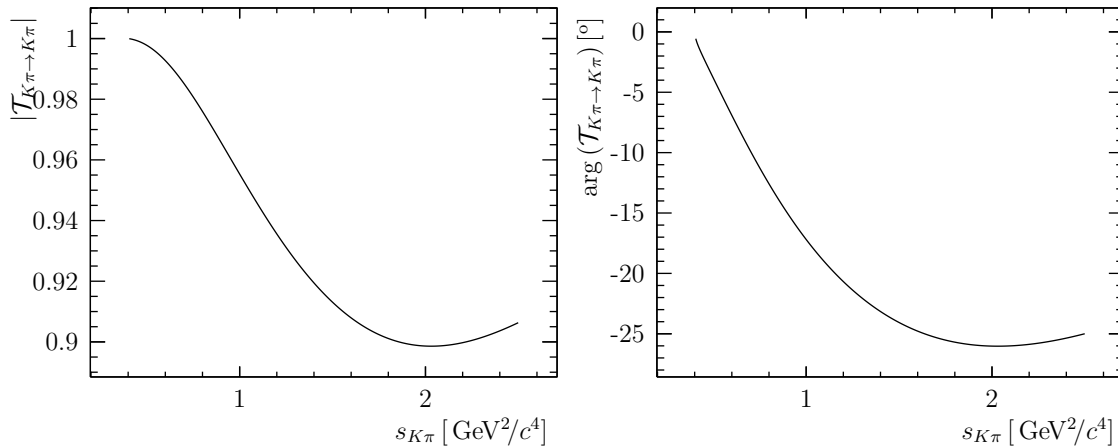


Figure 6.7: The $K\pi$ $I = 3/2$ S-wave scattering amplitude.

2059 The production amplitude for the $K\pi$ S-wave can be constructed using a subtly
 2060 different picture than the $\pi\pi$ S-wave. The approximation can be made that

$$\hat{K}\hat{P} \approx \hat{\alpha}(s), \quad (6.14)$$

2061 where $\hat{\alpha}(s)$ is a slowly varying complex function. This can be seen from the fact the
 2062 poles of the P-vector cancel the poles of the K matrix. This allows the insertion of
 2063 $\hat{K}^{-1}\hat{K}$ into the definition of the transition amplitude in Eq. 6.8, and a re-phrasing of
 2064 the production vector in terms of the matrix elements from scattering measurements,

$$\mathcal{F}_1 = \alpha_1(s)\hat{T}_{11} + \alpha_2(s)\hat{T}_{12}. \quad (6.15)$$

2065 In this picture, the production process proceeds via the direct production of a $K\pi$
 2066 (or $K\eta'$) state. This then scatters using the appropriate elements of the transition
 2067 matrix into the final state. However, the two pictures are formally equivalent
 2068 under the approximation in Eq. 6.14.

2069 The advantage of this re-parametrisation is that if the components of α have
 2070 the same phase, the production amplitude has the same phase-motion as that
 2071 of a scattering process with the same quantum numbers. This should be true
 2072 below the inelastic threshold, in the case of $K\pi$ about $1.5 \text{ GeV}/c^2$, and if the effects
 2073 of re-scattering are negligible. This result is known as Watson's theorem [76].
 2074 Conversely, large phase differences at relatively low energies would be clear signs
 2075 of re-scattering, as the phase-shift from production would no longer match the
 2076 phase-shift found in scattering.

2077 6.2 Covariant tensor formalism

2078 The effects of spin and orbital angular momentum are calculated using the Rarita-
 2079 Schwinger formalism, following a similar prescription to that described in Ref. [77].
 2080 Spin-matrix elements for quasi two-body processes are constructed in terms of a
 2081 series of polarisation and pure orbital angular momentum tensors. Consider the
 2082 decay of particle a that has integer spin J , into particles b and c , which have integer
 2083 spins s_b , s_c respectively. All three particles have an associated polarisation tensor,
 2084 $\epsilon^{(a,b,c)}$, which is of rank equal to the spin of the particle. The decay products b, c
 2085 will also in general have a relative orbital angular momentum l , which is expressed
 2086 in terms of the pure orbital angular momentum tensor, $L_{\mu\dots\nu}$, which is of rank
 2087 l . The matrix element for the decay is

$$\mathcal{M}_{a\rightarrow bc} = \epsilon_{\mu_a\dots\nu_a}^{(a)*} \epsilon_{\mu_b\dots\nu_b}^{(b)} \epsilon_{\mu_c\dots\nu_c}^{(c)} L_{\mu_l\dots\nu_l}^{(l)} G^{\mu_a\dots\nu_a \mu_b\dots\nu_b \mu_c\dots\nu_c \mu_l\dots\nu_l}, \quad (6.16)$$

2088 where the tensor G^{\dots} combines the polarisation and pure orbital angular momentum
 2089 tensor to produce a scalar object. This tensor is constructed from combinations of
 2090 the metric tensor $g_{\mu\nu}$ and the Levi-Civita tensor contracted with the four-momenta
 2091 of the decaying particle, $\varepsilon_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} P^\mu$. The second of these tensors is used only if
 2092 $J - (l - s_b - s_c)$ is odd, and ensures that matrix elements have the correct properties
 2093 under parity transformations. The matrix element of Eq. 6.16 can also be written
 2094 by defining the current, \mathcal{I} , of the decaying particle,

$$\mathcal{M}_{a\rightarrow bc} = \epsilon_{\underline{\mu}}^{(a)*} \mathcal{I}^{(a)\underline{\mu}}, \quad (6.17)$$

2095 where the notation $\underline{\mu} := \mu_a\dots\nu_a$ has been introduced by this equation to denote
 2096 sets of Lorentz indices. The current can therefore be written as

$$\mathcal{I}^{(a)\underline{\mu}} = \epsilon_{\underline{\alpha}}^{(b)} \epsilon_{\underline{\beta}}^{(c)} L_{\underline{\gamma}}^{(l)} G^{\underline{\mu}\alpha\beta\gamma} \quad (6.18)$$

2097 The isobar model factorises an N -body decay into a sequence of two-body
 2098 processes. Each of these quasi two-body decays can be described with a single spin
 2099 matrix element, and hence the total matrix element is the product of $N - 1$
 2100 matrix elements,

$$\mathcal{M} = \prod_{i=0}^{N-1} \mathcal{M}_{a_i \rightarrow b_i c_i}. \quad (6.19)$$

2101 For example, consider the quasi two-body topology shown in Fig. 6.2(a), labelling
 2102 the various states by $P \rightarrow X [ab] Y [cd]$. The matrix element for this decay is

$$\mathcal{M} = \sum_i \sum_j \mathcal{M}_{P \rightarrow X_i Y_j} \mathcal{M}_{X_i \rightarrow ab} \mathcal{M}_{Y_j \rightarrow cd}, \quad (6.20)$$

2103 where the sums are over the possible polarisations of the intermediate states.

2104 It is preferable to build a generic formulation of the total matrix element for
 2105 arbitrary topologies, spins and angular momenta, rather than performing an explicit
 2106 computation for each possible process. A generic approach to computing matrix
 2107 elements is to introduce a generalised “current” associated with a decaying particle
 2108 that has absorbed the matrix elements of its decay products, which will be denoted
 2109 by \mathcal{J} . This current can be written in terms of the generalised currents of its
 2110 decay products as

$$\mathcal{J}^\mu = L_{\underline{\beta}}^{(l)} G^{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} \times \left(\mathcal{S}_{\underline{\nu}\gamma}^1 \mathcal{J}_1^\gamma \right) \times \left(\mathcal{S}_{\underline{\alpha}\eta}^2 \mathcal{J}_2^\eta \right), \quad (6.21)$$

2111 where $\mathcal{S}_{\underline{\mu}}^{1,2}$ is the spin-projection operator of decay products (1,2), which has been
 2112 used to sum intermediate polarisation tensors, using the definition

$$\sum_i \epsilon_{i\underline{a}} \epsilon_{i\underline{b}}^* = \mathcal{S}_{\underline{ab}}. \quad (6.22)$$

2113 The first two projection operations, which are sufficient for describing charm decays,
 2114 are:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu}(P) &= -g_{\mu\nu} + \frac{P_\mu P_\nu}{P^2} \\ \mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta}(P) &= \frac{1}{2} (\mathcal{S}_{\mu\alpha} \mathcal{S}_{\nu\beta} + \mathcal{S}_{\mu\beta} \mathcal{S}_{\nu\alpha}) - \frac{1}{3} \mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} \mathcal{S}_{\alpha\beta}. \end{aligned} \quad (6.23)$$

2115 This operator projects out the component of a tensor that is orthogonal to the
 2116 four-momentum, P , and has rank $2J$ for an angular momentum of J . The orbital
 2117 angular momentum tensors are also constructed from the spin projection operators
 2118 and the relative momentum of the decay products, Q_a [77], and are written as:

$$\begin{aligned} L_\mu &= -\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu}(P_a) Q_a^\nu \\ L_{\mu\nu} &= \mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta}(P_a) Q_a^\alpha Q_a^\beta. \end{aligned} \quad (6.24)$$

2119 The matrix element for a generic cascade of particle decays can then be calculated
 2120 recursively. In the case of the decay of a spinless particle, the matrix element for
 2121 the total decay process is identical to the current of the decaying particle. The
 2122 generalised current can therefore be seen to merely be a convenient device for

organising the computation of spin matrix elements, but is not generally associated with the propagation of angular momentum. It is also useful to define the spin-projected currents, $\mathcal{S}_{\underline{\mu\nu}}J^\nu$, which will be written as $S, V^\mu, T^{\mu\nu}$ for (pseudo)scalar, (pseudo)vector and (pseudo)tensor states, respectively.

The spin-projected current for a particle to a pair of decay products in a well-defined orbital angular momentum state can generally be written as a function of the four-momentum of the decay particle, P^μ , the four-momentum difference of its decay products, Q^μ , and the spin-projected currents associated with its decay products. Consider the current S associated with the decay of a pseudoscalar to a pair of vector mesons, which have currents V_1^μ , and V_2^ν . If the vector mesons are in a relative S-wave, the only other tensor available to compute the scalar current is the metric tensor, $g_{\mu\nu}$. The only unique Lorentz scalar combination of these tensors is

$$S = g_{\mu\nu}V_1^\mu V_2^\nu, \quad (6.25)$$

and hence this is identified as the scalar current. The relations between currents necessary for this thesis are presented in Table 6.2, where the rules have been derived by considering the symmetries of the Lorentz indices, and where relevant the parity properties of the matrix element. All of the rules associated with particles of relatively low spins necessary to describe the decays of pseudoscalars to three or four pseudoscalars are uniquely determined by these constraints up to functions of Lorentz scalars, such as the mass of the decaying particle. This uniqueness property does not generally hold for more complicated decays, for example those that involve a vector meson decaying to a pair of vector mesons. This formulation allows complicated spin configurations to be calculated in terms of a simple and consistent set of rules. The rules are written both with consistent dependencies to clarify their derivations, and in some cases simplified forms are also given. These simplifications typically rely on the symmetry properties of the Levi-Civita tensor and the relationship $\mathcal{S}^{ab}\mathcal{S}_{bc} = \mathcal{S}_{\underline{c}}^a$, which is the defining characteristic of a projection operator.

6.2.1 Comparing formalisms

Outside of the covariant tensor formalism, there are considerable ambiguities in defining states with the same spin content and parity, but different orbital quantum numbers. For example, the process $P \rightarrow V_1V_2$, where P is a pseudoscalar and V_1 ,

Table 6.2: Rules for calculating the current associated with a given decay chain in terms of the currents of the decay products. Where relevant, the spin projection operator \mathcal{S} and the orbital angular momentum operators L are those for the decaying particle.

Topology	Current	Simplified current
$S \rightarrow [S_1 S_2]$	$S_1 S_2$	
$S \rightarrow [V S_1]^{L=1}$	$L^\mu V_\mu S_1$	
$S \rightarrow [V_1 V_2]^{L=0}$	$g_{\mu\nu} V_1^\mu V_2^\nu$	
$S \rightarrow [V_1 V_2]^{L=1}$	$\varepsilon_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} P^\mu L^\nu V_1^\alpha V_2^\beta$	$\varepsilon_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} P^\mu Q^\nu V_1^\alpha V_2^\beta$
$S \rightarrow [V_1 V_2]^{L=2}$	$L^{\mu\nu} V_1^\mu V_2^\nu$	
$S \rightarrow [T S_1]^{L=2}$	$L^{\mu\nu} T_{\mu\nu} S_1$	
$S \rightarrow [T V]^{L=1}$	$L^\mu T_{\mu\nu} V^\nu$	
$S \rightarrow [T V]^{L=2}$	$L^{\mu\nu} \varepsilon_{\nu\alpha\beta\gamma} P^\alpha T^{\beta\mu} V^\gamma$	$\varepsilon_{\nu\alpha\beta\gamma} P^\alpha Q^\nu L_\mu T^{\beta\mu} V^\gamma$
$S \rightarrow [T_1 T_2]^{L=0}$	$T_1^{\mu\nu} T_{2\mu\nu}$	
$V_\mu \rightarrow [S_1 S_2]^{L=1}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} L^\nu S_1 S_2$	$L_\mu S_1 S_2$
$V_\mu \rightarrow [V_1 S]^{L=0}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} V_1^\nu S$	
$V_\mu \rightarrow [V_1 S]^{L=1}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} \varepsilon^{\nu\alpha\beta\gamma} P_\alpha L_\beta V_{1\gamma} S$	$-\varepsilon_{\mu\alpha\beta\gamma} P^\alpha Q^\beta V_1^\gamma S$
$V_\mu \rightarrow [V_1 S]^{L=2}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} L^{\nu\alpha} V_{1\alpha} S$	$L_{\mu\alpha} V_1^\alpha S$
$V_\mu \rightarrow [T S]^{L=1}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} L_\alpha T^{\nu\alpha}$	
$V_\mu \rightarrow [T S]^{L=2}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} \varepsilon^{\nu\alpha\beta\gamma} P_\alpha L_\beta^\eta T_{\gamma\eta} S$	$-\varepsilon_{\mu\alpha\beta\gamma} P^\alpha Q^\beta T^{\gamma\eta} L_\eta$
$V_\mu \rightarrow [T V_1]^{L=0}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} T^{\nu\alpha} V_{1\alpha}$	
$T_{\mu\nu} \rightarrow [S_1 S_2]^{L=2}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} L^{\alpha\beta} S_1 S_2$	$L_{\mu\nu} S_1 S_2$
$T_{\mu\nu} \rightarrow [V S]^{L=1}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} L^\alpha V^\beta S$	$\left(\frac{1}{2}(L_\mu S_{\nu\beta} + S_{\mu\beta} L_\nu) - \frac{1}{3} S_{\mu\nu} L_\beta\right) V^\beta$
$T_{\mu\nu} \rightarrow [V S]^{L=2}$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} \varepsilon^{\alpha\gamma\eta\lambda} P_\gamma L_\eta^\beta V^\lambda S$	$-\frac{1}{2}(\varepsilon_{\mu\gamma\eta\lambda} L_\nu + \varepsilon_{\nu\gamma\eta\lambda} L_\mu) P^\gamma Q^\eta V^\lambda$
$T_{\mu\nu} \rightarrow [T_1 S]$	$\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} T_1^{\alpha\beta}$	

2153 V_2 are vector mesons, has three possible polarisation states. The most general form
 2154 of the matrix element for this process is given by

$$\mathcal{M}_{P \rightarrow V_1 V_2} = V_1^\mu V_2^\nu \left(F_0 g_{\mu\nu} + F_1 \varepsilon_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} P_1^\alpha P_2^\beta + F_2 P_{1\nu} P_{2\mu} \right), \quad (6.26)$$

2155 where V_1^ν, V_2^μ are the currents associated with the decay of vector meson 1 and
 2156 2, and P_1^μ, P_2^ν the corresponding four-momenta. The terms $F_{0,1,2}$ can generally
 2157 be functions of Lorentz scalars such as the masses of the vector mesons or the
 2158 decaying pseudoscalar meson, and hence can be described as ‘‘form-factor-like’’.
 2159 In the formalism used in the amplitude analyses of $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ [78] and

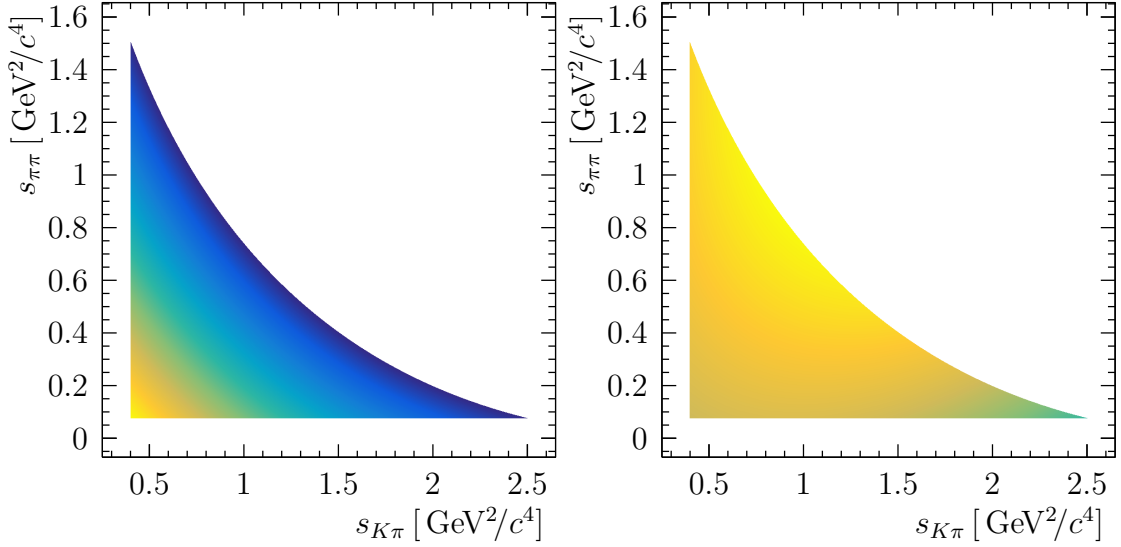


Figure 6.8: The F_0^D (left) and F_2^D (right) dependence on $s_{K\pi}$ and $s_{\pi\pi}$ in the covariant tensor formalism. Note that in the area of the resonances of interest, i.e. the $\rho(770)$ and the $K^*(892)^0$, the variation is small.

2160 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+K^-\pi^+\pi^-$ [79], performed by the Mark III and CLEO collaborations
 2161 respectively, the F_0 term has been referred to as the S-wave ($L = 0$), and the F_2 as
 2162 the D-wave ($L = 2$). The F_1 term corresponds to the P wave ($L = 1$), and is clearly
 2163 distinguished by being odd under the parity transformation, with the differences
 2164 between parity even and parity odd spin factors discussed further in Sect. 6.2.2. It
 2165 is noted in Ref. [79] that what is defined as the D wave is in fact a superposition of S
 2166 and D wave. In the covariant tensor formalism, the D wave contains both F_0 and F_2
 2167 terms. The S wave only contains an F_0 term. In previous analyses, there is typically
 2168 a large interference term between S and D wave. By defining in terms of the orbital
 2169 angular momentum operators, the waves are constructed orthogonal to each other
 2170 when phase space is extended to infinity. Hence, the interference terms between the
 2171 different orbital states are inherently suppressed. It is important to note that this
 2172 choice of basis is not related by a linear transformation, due to different dependence
 2173 on the vector masses in F_0, F_2 . Previously, it has been assumed that these are
 2174 constants. For a term to be form-factor-like, it is necessary and sufficient that the
 2175 term only depends on s, s_{V_1}, s_{V_2} where \sqrt{s} is the mass of the decaying particle and
 2176 $\sqrt{s_{V_1, V_2}}$ are the masses of the two vector states. The form factors therefore result
 2177 in distortions of the lineshapes of the two vectors, but do not strongly affect the
 2178 polarisation structure. The dependence on s, s_{V_1}, s_{V_2} can be explicitly calculated in
 2179 the covariant tensor formalism. The S-wave is unchanged, and therefore F_0^S is a

2180 constant. For the D-wave matrix element, the co-efficients are given by

$$\begin{aligned} F_0^D &= \frac{1}{3s} \left(2(s_{V_1} + s_{V_2})s^2 - s^2 - (s_{V_1} - s_{V_2})^2 \right) \\ F_2^D &= \frac{1}{3s^2} \left(4(s_{V_1} - s_{V_2})^2 - 2s^2 - s^2(s_{V_1} + s_{V_2}) \right). \end{aligned} \quad (6.27)$$

2181 The variation of these factors for the example $D^0 \rightarrow K^*[K^-\pi^+]\rho[\pi^+\pi^-]$ is shown
2182 in Fig. 6.8 in the two dimensional plane of $s_{K\pi}$ vs. $s_{\pi\pi}$. These form factors
2183 vary rather slowly across the phase-space when compared to other features in
2184 the $s_{K\pi}, s_{\pi\pi}$ plane, which will generally have relatively narrow peaks associated
2185 with the two vector resonances.

2186 6.2.2 Parity

2187 Four-body weak decays can occur via amplitudes that are both odd and even under
2188 the parity transformation. Consider the S-wave and P-wave contributions to the
2189 two-body vector-vector process $P \rightarrow V_1V_2$. The matrix element for the S-wave is

$$\mathcal{M}_S = \left(-Q_{V_1} + \frac{P_{V_1} \cdot Q_{V_1}}{P_{V_1}^2} P_{V_1} \right)^\mu \left(-Q_{V_2} + \frac{P_{V_2} \cdot Q_{V_2}}{P_{V_2}^2} P_{V_2} \right)_\mu, \quad (6.28)$$

2190 where P_{V_1}, P_{V_2} are the four momentum of each vector meson, and Q_{V_1}, Q_{V_2} are the
2191 momentum difference between the decay products of each of the vector mesons.
2192 This matrix element involves exclusively contractions of proper vectors, the four
2193 momenta, and hence is even under parity. The matrix element for the P-wave is

$$\mathcal{M}_P = \varepsilon_{\mu\nu\alpha\beta} P_{V_1}^\mu P_{V_2}^\nu Q_{V_1}^\alpha Q_{V_2}^\beta. \quad (6.29)$$

2194 How this matrix element acts under parity can be made clear by transforming to the
2195 frame where the first vector meson is at rest. In this frame, the matrix element is

$$\mathcal{M}_P = \sqrt{s_{V_1}} \mathbf{p}_{V_1} \cdot (\mathbf{q}_{V_1} \times \mathbf{q}_{V_2}), \quad (6.30)$$

2196 where lower case quantities are three-vectors evaluated in this reference frame.
2197 Therefore, this matrix element is odd under parity. The general amplitude contains
2198 a superposition of the amplitudes for different orbital angular momentum states, and
2199 therefore the probability density will contain a mixture of P-even and P-odd terms:

$$|\mathcal{M}|^2 = |\mathcal{M}_S|^2 + |\mathcal{M}_P|^2 + 2\mathcal{R}e(\mathcal{M}_S\mathcal{M}_P^*), \quad (6.31)$$

2200 and therefore interference between P-even and P-odd amplitudes can result in
2201 observable parity asymmetries. These asymmetries can only be observed in restricted
2202 regions of phase space as the interference terms vanish when integrating over
2203 the entire space.

2204 6.3 Three-body isobars

2205 The dynamical functions discussed in the previous sections describe the final state
 2206 interactions of a pair of stable hadrons. Consider the case of a cascade decay
 2207 where rather than two stable particles, a resonance decays to three particles via
 2208 an additional intermediate isobar. Using the decay $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow \rho[\pi^+\pi^-]\pi^+$ as an
 2209 example, the simplest model of this system would assume the ρ is a stable particle,
 2210 and evaluate the width as given in Eq. 6.3 at the pole mass of the ρ , with a threshold
 2211 in the width at $\sqrt{s} = m_\rho + m_\pi$. This threshold results in a cusp in the amplitude,
 2212 which is unphysical as the threshold should be smeared over the finite width of
 2213 the ρ meson, resulting in a structure known as a *woolly cusp* [80].

2214 A more complete treatment therefore considers the running width to be due to
 2215 an infinite number of coupled channels, each to an effective ρ meson of a slightly
 2216 different mass. This is equivalent to integrating over the possible three-body phase-
 2217 space of the final state particles in the decay. This model therefore assumes that
 2218 the interactions of the three body final state can be accounted for using only
 2219 the width of the decaying state,

$$\Gamma(s_R) \propto \int \frac{d^3p_a}{(2\pi)^3 2E_a} \frac{d^3p_b}{(2\pi)^3 2E_b} \frac{d^3p_c}{(2\pi)^3 2E_c} |\mathcal{M}_{R \rightarrow abc}|^2 \delta(\sqrt{s_R} - (E_a + E_b + E_c)) \delta(\mathbf{p}_a + \mathbf{p}_b + \mathbf{p}_c), \quad (6.32)$$

2220 where $\mathcal{M}_{R \rightarrow abc}$ is the matrix element for the three-body decay. It is assumed that
 2221 this can also be calculated using the isobar model. The integral in Eq. 6.32 can
 2222 be reexpressed as a Dalitz-like integral as only spin-averaged matrix elements are
 2223 considered. In terms of the invariant mass-squared of the ab and bc systems, s_{ab}
 2224 and s_{bc} respectively, the integral can be expressed as

$$\Gamma(s_R) \propto \frac{1}{s_R} \int ds_{ab} ds_{bc} |\mathcal{M}_{R \rightarrow abc}|^2. \quad (6.33)$$

2225 Multiple intermediate isobars contribute to the decay of most resonances. Consider
 2226 again the case of the $a_1(1260)^+$. Three intermediate states are known to contribute
 2227 below the $KK\pi$ threshold:

$$\begin{aligned} a_1(1260)^+ &\rightarrow \rho(770)^0 [\pi^+\pi^-] \pi^+ \\ &\quad [\rho(770)^0 [\pi^+\pi^-] \pi^+]^{L=2} \\ &\quad [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^+, \end{aligned}$$

2228 where the dominant contribution is from $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow \rho\pi^+$. Following the formalism
 2229 in Ref. [81], the matrix element is expressed in terms of currents.

$$\mathcal{M}_{\rho\pi^+} = \varepsilon_a^\mu (j_\mu + j'_\mu) = \varepsilon_a^\mu \mathcal{M}_\mu^1 \quad (6.34)$$

2230 where $\varepsilon_a^\mu(P)$ is the polarisation tensor of the $a_1(1260)^+$. The hadronic current is j_μ
 2231 and j'_μ the current under the exchange of identical pions. These are composed of the
 2232 spin “currents” discussed in Sect. 6.2 dressed with two body dynamical functions
 2233 such as the relativistic Breit-Wigner \mathcal{T}_{RBW} or a K-matrix $\mathcal{T}_{\pi\pi}$ and form factors. For
 2234 example, the hadronic current for the $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow \rho\pi^+$ is written as:

$$j_{\rho\pi}^\mu = \mathcal{T}_{RBW}(s_\rho)F(q^2)L^\mu(p_\rho, q_\rho), \quad (6.35)$$

2235 where the form factor, $F(q^2)$, is a function of the linear momentum of the bachelor
 2236 pion in the rest frame of the $a_1(1260)$, and takes the form

$$F(q^2) = e^{-R^2q^2/2}, \quad (6.36)$$

2237 where R is related to the finite size of the a_1 . This form factor is required such
 2238 that the width does not diverge as $s \rightarrow \infty$. The definitions of spin currents
 2239 are given in Sect. 6.2. For completeness, the hadronic currents for the other
 2240 two intermediate states are:

$$\begin{aligned} j_{[\pi\pi]L=0\pi}^\mu &= \mathcal{T}_{\pi\pi}(s_{\pi\pi})F(q^2)L_1^{\mu\nu}(p_a, q_a) \\ j_{[\rho\pi]L=2}^\mu &= \mathcal{T}_{RBW}(s_\rho)F(q^2)L_2^{\mu\nu}(p_a, q_a)L_{1\nu}(p_\rho, q_\rho). \end{aligned} \quad (6.37)$$

2241 The total matrix element is the coherent sum of these matrix elements, with
 2242 the appropriate coupling constants g_i .

$$\mathcal{M} = \varepsilon^\mu \sum_i g_i (j_\mu^i + j_\mu^{i'}), \quad (6.38)$$

2243 where the sum is over the three states listed above. Taking the modulus-square
 2244 and summing over the polarisations of the initial state results in

$$|\mathcal{M}|^2 = \mathcal{S}^{\mu\nu} \sum_{ij} g_i g_j^* (j_\mu^i + j_\mu^{i'}) (j_\nu^j + j_\nu^{j'})^*, \quad (6.39)$$

2245 where the polarisation tensors ε_μ have been summed using the definition of the
 2246 projection operator $\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu}$.

2247 In the limit where the intermediate isobar is narrow, the three-body treatment is
 2248 well approximated by a relativistic Breit-Wigner function, taking the intermediate
 2249 isobar to be a stable state. For example, the only significant decay chain of
 2250 the $K_2^*(1430)^-$ resonance is:

$$K_2^*(1430)^- \rightarrow \underbrace{K^*(892)^0 \pi^-}_{\rightarrow K^- \pi^+},$$

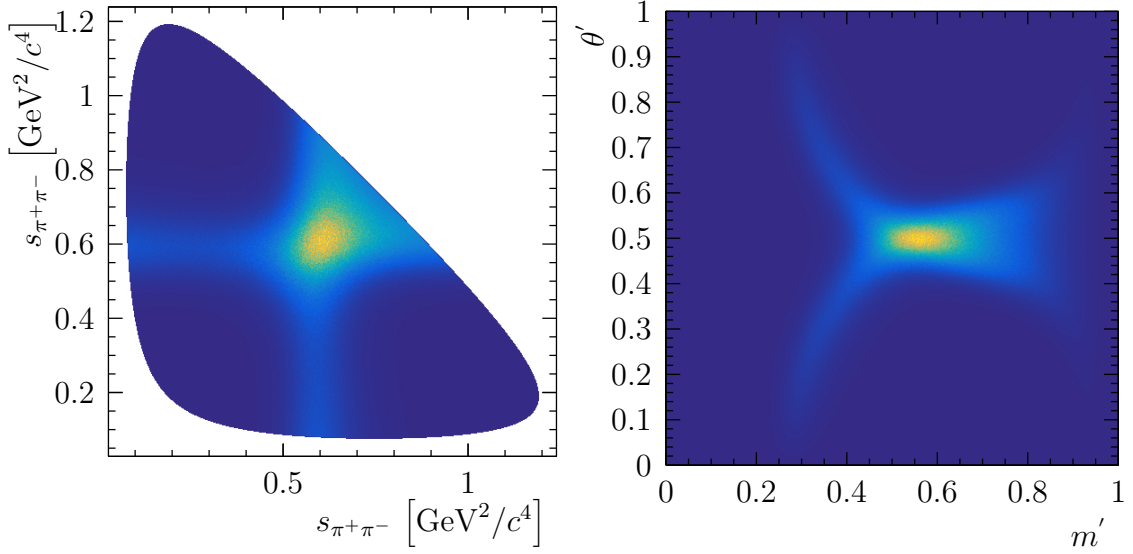


Figure 6.9: Square Dalitz transformation for the spin averaged $a_1(1260) \rightarrow \rho\pi$ decay, where the colour scale indicates the decay rate.

2251 and therefore the width of the $K_2^*(1430)^-$ is well approximated by Eq. 6.3 due
 2252 to the relative narrowness of the $K^*(892)^0$ state.

2253 The integral in Eq. 6.33 must be computed numerically for a general matrix
 2254 element. It is convenient to re-express the Dalitz coordinates in terms of the so-
 2255 called square Dalitz coordinates. These have the advantage that the integral is
 2256 over the unit square, rather than over the somewhat complicated boundary of the
 2257 regular Dalitz plot. The square Dalitz coordinates are defined as

$$\begin{aligned}
 m &= \frac{1}{\pi} \arccos \left(\frac{2(\sqrt{s_{ab}} - m_{min})}{m_{max} - m_{min}} - 1 \right) \\
 \theta &= \frac{1}{\pi} \arccos \left(\frac{\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} p_a^\mu p_c^\nu}{\sqrt{\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} p_a^\mu p_a^\nu} \sqrt{\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu} p_c^\mu p_c^\nu}} \right),
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{6.40}$$

2258 where m_{min}, m_{max} are the minimal and maximal values of $\sqrt{s_{ab}}$, the invariant mass
 2259 of the ab system. The spin-one projection operator of the ab system, $\mathcal{S}_{\mu\nu}$ contracting
 2260 a pair of four-vectors is equivalent to the dot-product of the corresponding three
 2261 momenta evaluated in the rest frame of the ab system. Therefore, θ is proportional
 2262 to the angle between a and c in the rest frame of the ab system, which is the
 2263 definition of the helicity angle. The Jacobian of this transformation is

$$J = 2\pi^2 |\mathbf{p}_a^*| |\mathbf{p}_c^*| \sqrt{s_{ab}} (m_{max} - m_{min}) \sin(\pi m) \sin(\pi \theta),
 \tag{6.41}$$

2264 where \mathbf{p}_x^* is the three momentum of particle x in the rest frame of ab . An
 2265 example of the square Dalitz transformation is shown in Fig. 6.9, for the process

2266 $a_1(1260) \rightarrow \rho[\pi\pi]\pi$. The regular Dalitz plot is shown in Fig. 6.9(a), with the
 2267 clear ρ contribution in both combinations of $\pi^+\pi^-$. The result of transforming
 2268 onto the square Dalitz coordinates is shown in Fig. 6.9(b), where the resonance
 2269 region has now migrated to the centre of the space. The symmetric pattern in
 2270 the angular co-ordinate θ' is a consequence of the spin of the decaying ρ meson.
 2271 After this transformation, Eq. 6.33 becomes

$$\Gamma(s_R) = \frac{1}{s_R} \int_0^1 \int_0^1 J(m, \theta) dm d\theta |\mathcal{M}_{R \rightarrow abc}(m, \theta)|^2. \quad (6.42)$$

2272 In order to calculate the width as a function of mass the integral is computed at a
 2273 fixed set of points in s_R , and then approximated everywhere else by interpolating
 2274 these points using cubic splines.

2275 6.4 Quasi model-independent formalism

2276 In addition to the explicit parameterisations of isobars described in the previous
 2277 sections, it is useful to be able to examine the behaviour of an amplitude without
 2278 making assumptions about the shape of the dynamical function. This is referred
 2279 to as *quasi* model-independent as the extraction of the phase-behaviour of an
 2280 amplitude relies on the other components of the model being described accurately.
 2281 The formalism for performing such an analysis follows a method first used by E791
 2282 [82, 83] in studying the $K^-\pi^+$ S-wave contribution to $D^+ \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+$ decays.

2283 Typically a dynamical function will depend on the squared invariant mass of
 2284 its daughters, which will be labelled by x for generality. The range of parameter
 2285 x is divided into N segments of equal length. The function F_n in segment n is
 2286 then parametrised by a third order polynomial,

$$F_n(x) = a_n + b_n(x - nL) + c_n(x - nL)^2 + d_n(x - nL)^3, \quad (6.43)$$

2287 where L is the length of each segment, and the co-efficients a_n, b_n, c_n, d_n differ
 2288 between the segments. The co-efficients can be expressed in terms of the value of the
 2289 function, a_n , at the connecting points between the segments by applying continuity
 2290 and differentiability up to second order. The values of the function at the connecting
 2291 points, a_n are then free parameters to be determined in a fit. This parametrisation
 2292 is known as a *cubic spline*, and is flexible enough to describe a wide range of smooth
 2293 functions. The spline will not be able to reproduce features that are smaller than
 2294 the spacing between the segments. For a general complex amplitude, the real and
 2295 imaginary parts of the amplitude are treated as two independent cubic splines.

2296 6.5 Matrix elements

2297 The components of the isobar model are combined to form the Lorentz invariant
2298 matrix elements of the four-body process. Two examples of how this is done
2299 are discussed in this section.

2300 The quasi two-body process $D^0 \rightarrow K^* \rho$ is shown in Fig. 6.10. As there are three
2301 (S,P,D) possible orbital angular momentum configurations of the two vector mesons,
2302 therefore there are three independent complex coupling coefficients between the
2303 initial state, D^0 , and the $K^* \rho$ state, g_S , g_P and g_D . The couplings between the
2304 decaying state and these intermediate states are generally the main parameters
2305 of an amplitude fit. The total matrix element for $D^0 \rightarrow K^* \rho$ coherently sums
2306 the different orbital components:

$$\mathcal{M}_{K^* \rho} = \left(g_S g_{\mu\nu} + g_P P_D^\alpha Q_D^\beta \varepsilon_{\alpha\beta\mu\nu} B_1(q_D, 0) + g_D L_{\mu\nu} B_2(q_D, 0) \right) j_{K^*}^\mu j_\rho^\nu, \quad (6.44)$$

2307 where $B_L(q_D, 0)$ are normalised Blatt-Weisskopf factors associated with the decay
2308 of the D^0 , detailed in Table. 6.1. The currents $j_{K^*}^\mu, j_\rho^\nu$ describe the propagation
2309 and decay of the K^* and ρ resonances, namely by the Breit-Wigner function and
2310 the $L = 1$ orbital operator.

2311 The second example to consider is the cascade process $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1270)^- \pi^+$
2312 where the $K_1(1270)$ decays via:

$$\begin{aligned} K_1(1270)^- &\rightarrow \rho K^- \\ &K^* \pi^-, \end{aligned}$$

2313 where the other couplings of the $K_1(1270)$ are neglected in this section for brevity.
2314 The amplitude for this process is then given by:

$$\mathcal{M}_{K_1 \pi} = g_{K_1 \pi} B_1 L_\mu(p_D, q_D) j_{K_1}^\mu, \quad (6.45)$$

2315 where $g_{K_1 \pi}$ is the complex coupling coefficient between the D^0 and this isobar,
2316 sometimes referred to as the production coupling. The current, $j_{K_1}^\mu$, describes the
2317 propagation and decay of the $K_1(1270)$ meson.

$$j_{K_1}^\mu = \mathcal{T}_{K_1} \left(g_{\rho K} j_{\rho K}^\mu + g_{K^* \pi} j_{K^* \pi}^\mu \right), \quad (6.46)$$

2318 where \mathcal{T}_{K_1} is the dynamic function associated with the three-body isobar, discussed
2319 in Sect.6.3. The currents associated with each of the intermediate states, $j_{\rho K}$ and
2320 $j_{K^* \pi}$, are coherently summed with complex co-efficients $g_{\rho K}$ and $g_{K^* \pi}$, and are

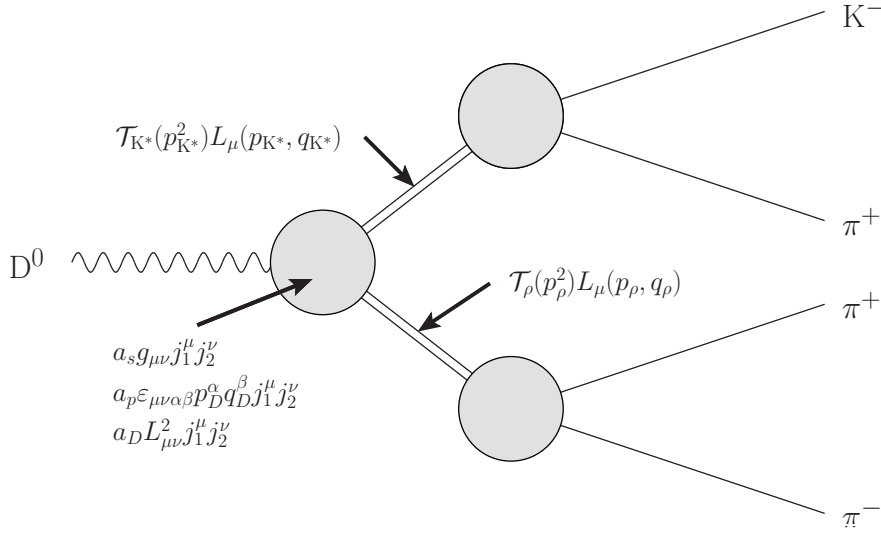


Figure 6.10: Diagram from the quasi two-body process $D^0 \rightarrow K^* \rho$

2321 referred to as the decay co-efficients of the $K_1(1270)$. The total matrix element
 2322 is invariant under a simultaneous transformation of the production coupling and
 2323 all decay couplings and hence one of the couplings is redundant and can be fixed.
 2324 By convention, the largest of the decay couplings is fixed along the real axis, so
 2325 $g_{\rho K} = 1$ in the case of $K_1(1270)$. The production coupling and the other decay
 2326 couplings are then defined with respect to this choice. It is noted that this is
 2327 a convention and does not make stricter assumptions about the factorisability
 2328 of coupling constants. Explicitly, interactions between the bachelor pion and
 2329 the $K_1(1270)$ daughters potentially alter the coupling coefficients significantly.
 2330 This would result in different decay couplings measured in different production
 2331 modes of the $K_1(1270)$. However, within the assumptions of the isobar model, the
 2332 decay couplings of the $K_1(1270)$ should be universal, and hence this factorisability
 2333 assumption is imposed when studying the $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ sample. For example,
 2334 in the case of the $K_1(1270)$ it is assumed that the decay couplings are identical
 2335 between production modes $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1270)^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1270)^- \pi^+$. A
 2336 comparison of the couplings between different production modes of a resonance
 2337 could lead to some novel tests of the assumptions of the isobar model, but such
 2338 work is outside of the scope of this thesis.

2339 6.6 AmpGen framework

2340 The large sizes of the RS data set and simulation samples mean an efficient method
 2341 for computing amplitudes is crucial in performing fits in a reasonable amount

2342 of time. An additional challenge in the case of studying four-body final states
2343 is that there are many different spin matrix elements, as well as many different
2344 combinations of propagators. It is clearly impractical to code each possible amplitude
2345 by hand. Therefore, amplitudes must be described within some abstraction layer that
2346 calculates the complex function of the final state momenta and various constants,
2347 such as the masses and widths of the resonances. These abstraction layers are
2348 typically inefficient, as they will involve many function invocations and various
2349 complex memory operations. Flexibility in the definition of the amplitude is often
2350 achieved via the use of virtual functions, that if the PDF is evaluated many times
2351 can incur a significant performance penalty.

2352 The goal is hence to achieve maximum flexibility and modularity in defining
2353 the amplitude, while not incurring significant run-time penalties when compared
2354 to hand-written code. This is achieved by defining the algebraic expressions
2355 that make up the components of the amplitude in the form of *binary expression*
2356 *trees*, where the underlying representation of the tree is a series of C++ objects.
2357 Before the amplitude is evaluated, this expression tree is converted into efficient
2358 source code, compiled and then dynamically linked against the executable. As
2359 the software generates the code that evaluates the amplitude, this technique is a
2360 form of *metaprogramming*. There are several advantages to the meta-programming
2361 approach other than the speed to evaluation:

- 2362 1. The definition of the amplitude is flexible. The same generating code can
2363 be used for any number of final-state particles, including final-state particles
2364 with intrinsic spin. This flexibility incurs no significant runtime penalties, as
2365 it is partitioned from the function evaluation by the compilation process.
- 2366 2. Inputs to the function can be mapped from event data or constants like
2367 resonant masses and widths. These are then packed in a cache friendly way,
2368 without having to deal with such optimisations when writing the code.
- 2369 3. Compiled models can be distributed as part of the documentation, therefore
2370 it is straightforward to use the results of a complicated model without having
2371 to rely on a complicated framework. This is useful for interfacing with Monte
2372 Carlo generators, and is how these models are integrated into the LHCb
2373 simulation framework.

2374 This approach has been implemented in the AMPGEN Fitter, which is loosely
 2375 based on the Minuit INTerface (MINT) Fitter used for the amplitude analyses
 2376 of the decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^- K^- \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^-$ performed on CLEO
 2377 data [79, 84]. Each complex amplitude can be evaluated approximately at a
 2378 rate 10^6 /s/core, which is roughly $20\times$ faster than the original MINT fitter. The
 2379 improvement in performance is more dramatic for more complex amplitudes, such
 2380 as those with more complicated spin amplitudes or using K-matrix propagators.
 2381 Due to the improvement in performance, it is straightforward to fit the parameters
 2382 of lineshapes such as masses and widths that usually need to be fixed. It is also
 2383 possible to perform complex quasi-model independent investigations. Evaluation
 2384 of the amplitudes, calculation of normalisation integrals and error propagation
 2385 are all multi-threaded using the OpenMP API.

2386 6.6.1 Decay descriptors

2387 A model is described in terms of a series of user-specified decay descriptors. These
 2388 are parsed into decay trees, which in turn can generate the binary expression tree
 2389 for the amplitude. A series of examples of these decay descriptors are given, and
 2390 the expressions that they generate:

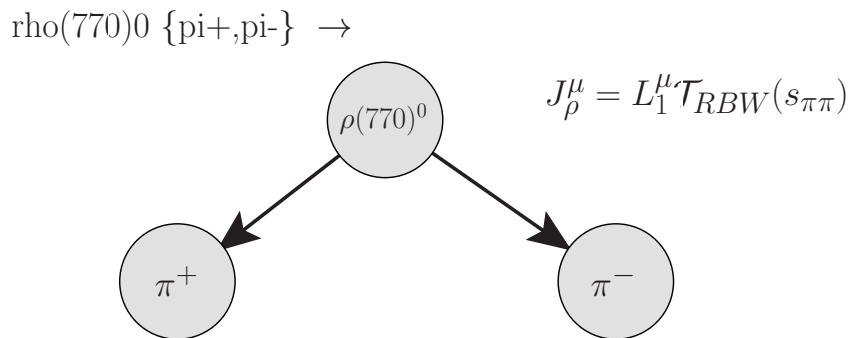


Figure 6.11: Decay descriptor, tree and expression for $\rho(770)^0 \rightarrow \pi^+ \pi^-$

2391 The first example is shown in Fig. 6.11. A $\rho(770)^0$ meson decays to a pair of
 2392 pions. By default it is assumed that resonances are described by the relativistic
 2393 Breit-Wigner formula, and that the daughter particles are in the minimal orbital
 2394 angular momentum state allowed by the relevant conservation laws. Alternative
 2395 lineshapes and other orbital angular momentum states can also be specified by
 2396 modifying the decay descriptor.

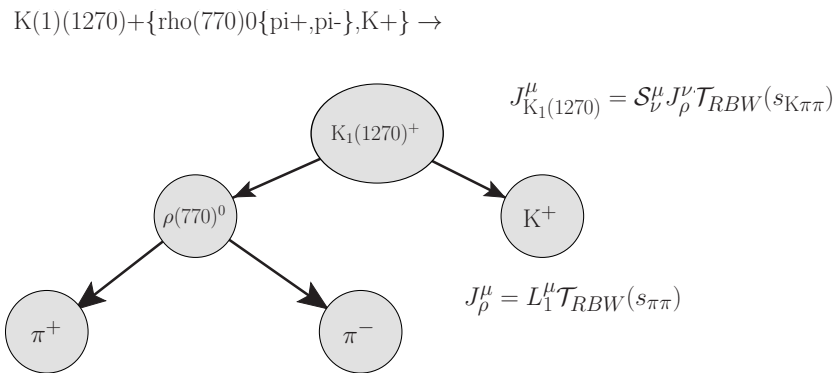


Figure 6.12: Decay descriptor, tree and expression for $K_1(1270) \rightarrow \rho(770)^0 K^+$.

2397 The total decay tree can either be constructed from a series of subtrees, or
 2398 specified inline. An example of this is shown in Fig. 6.12. A $K_1(1270)^+$ meson
 2399 decays into a $\rho(770)^0$ meson and a charged kaon. The $\rho(770)^0$ meson has the same
 2400 decay descriptor and hence amplitude as the previous example.

7

Amplitude analysis of $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\mp \pi^\pm$ decays

Contents

7.1	Fitting formalism	116
7.1.1	Likelihood definition	117
7.1.2	Fit fractions	118
7.2	Dynamic binning	119
7.2.1	Goodness-of-fit	120
7.3	Model construction	120
7.4	List of decay chains	125
7.5	Systematic uncertainties	126
7.6	The RS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$	127
7.7	The WS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$	133
7.7.1	Alternative parameterisations	137
7.8	Coherence factor	140

In this chapter, the resonant sub-structure of the decay modes $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ are modelled using the formalism developed in Ch. 6.

Amplitude analyses have been performed in the past on the RS mode by the Mark III [78], and BES III collaborations [85]. The analysis of the favoured mode presented in this thesis uses $\approx 60\times$ the number of signal candidates as the BES III and roughly 700 times more than the Mark III analyses. In addition, the BES III analysis does not include the treatment of the effects of the three-body final states on

2428 the running widths of resonances outlined in Sect.6.3, nor the more complex scalar
 2429 parameterisations outlined in Sect.6.1.2. This is the first amplitude analysis of the
 2430 WS decay mode, made possible by the extremely large size of the LHCb data sets.

2431 Section 7.1 introduces the formalism of the fit and how corrections for efficiency
 2432 variations are implemented using simulated events. It is useful to be able to sub-
 2433 divide the four-body phase space reliably into a discrete set of hyper-volumes,
 2434 both to quantify the quality of fits in a χ^2 test and to define regions of interest
 2435 for future model-independent measurements. The algorithm for this division is
 2436 described in Sect. 7.2.

2437 The number of possible parameterisations is extremely large ($\approx \mathcal{O}(10^{17})$) in
 2438 four-body amplitude models. Therefore a model-building algorithm is employed to
 2439 select plausible parameterisations. This algorithm is outlined in Sect. 7.3

2440 Sources of systematic uncertainty are discussed in Sect. 7.5. Results for the
 2441 RS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ are shown in Sect. 7.6. The knowledge gained
 2442 from the favoured fit is then applied to the suppressed mode, with results pre-
 2443 sented in Sect. 7.7.

2444 The model building procedure described in Sect. 7.3 results in ensembles of
 2445 parameterisations with comparable fit qualities. The general features of these
 2446 ensembles are discussed in Sect. 7.7.1. The coherence factor introduced in Ch. 2
 2447 and measured in Ch. 3 is then calculated using ensembles of models, and ‘local’
 2448 coherence factors and relative strong phases are calculated in a plausible binning
 2449 scheme for future measurements.

2450 7.1 Fitting formalism

2451 Independent fits are performed on the $K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ data sets,
 2452 using an unbinned maximum-likelihood procedure to determine the amplitude
 2453 parameters. The principal degrees of freedom in these fits are the complex coupling
 2454 co-efficients between states, and in several cases masses and widths of isobars
 2455 that are currently poorly known.

2456 7.1.1 Likelihood definition

2457 The probability density functions (PDFs) are functions of position in D^0 decay
 2458 phase-space, \mathbf{x} , and are composed of the signal amplitude model and the two
 2459 sources of background described in Ch. 5:

$$P(\mathbf{x}) = \varepsilon(\mathbf{x})\phi(\mathbf{x}) \left(\frac{Y_s}{\mathcal{N}_s} |\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{x})|^2 + \frac{Y_c}{\mathcal{N}_c} \mathcal{P}_c(\mathbf{x}) + \frac{Y_m}{\mathcal{N}_m} |\overline{\mathcal{M}}(\mathbf{x})|^2 \right). \quad (7.1)$$

2460 The signal PDF is described by the function $|\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{x})|^2$, where $\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{x})$ is the total
 2461 matrix element for the process, weighted by the four-body phase-space density
 2462 $\phi(\mathbf{x})$, and the phase-space acceptance, $\varepsilon(\mathbf{x})$. The mistag component involving
 2463 $\overline{\mathcal{M}}(\mathbf{x})$, is only present in the WS sample, and is modelled using the RS signal
 2464 PDF. The combinatorial background is modelled by $\mathcal{P}_c(\mathbf{x})$, and is present in both
 2465 samples. The normalisation of each component is given by the integral of the
 2466 PDF over the phase space, \mathcal{N}_i , where $i = (c, s, m)$, weighted by the fractional
 2467 yield, Y_i , determined in Ch. 5.

2468 The function to minimise is twice the negative log-likelihood:

$$\mathcal{L} = -2 \sum_{\mathbf{x} \in \text{data}} \log(P(\mathbf{x})). \quad (7.2)$$

2469 It is easier to minimise the equivalent reduced function

$$\mathcal{L}' = \mathcal{L} + 2 \sum_{\mathbf{x} \in \text{data}} \log(\phi(\mathbf{x})\varepsilon(\mathbf{x})) = -2 \sum_{\mathbf{x} \in \text{data}} \left(\frac{P(\mathbf{x})}{\phi(\mathbf{x})\varepsilon(\mathbf{x})} \right), \quad (7.3)$$

2470 rather than \mathcal{L} , as neither the efficiency nor phase space depend on any parameters
 2471 in the fit. This allows the cancellation of the efficiency and phase-space terms
 2472 in $P(\mathbf{x})$, which significantly simplifies the fit procedure: the efficiency variations
 2473 now only appear in the definition of the normalisation integrals, and hence an
 2474 explicit parametrisation of how the efficiency varies across the five-dimensional
 2475 phase space can be avoided.

2476 The efficiency-corrected normalisation of each PDF, $\mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x})$, is calculated using
 2477 Monte Carlo integration, and can be written as

$$\mathcal{N} = \int d\mathbf{x} \varepsilon(\mathbf{x}) \mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x}) \approx \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=0}^N \frac{\varepsilon(\mathbf{x}_i)}{g(\mathbf{x}_i)} |\mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x})|^2, \quad (7.4)$$

2478 where the sum is over events in an *integration sample*. The events in the integration
 2479 sample are distributed according to $g(\mathbf{x})$ with respect to the phase-space density.

2480 Consider the case where the integration sample consists of events that are generated
 2481 with some distribution $\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x})$, then propagated through the full reconstruction and
 2482 selected in the same way as data. The distribution of events in the integration
 2483 sample is therefore $g(\mathbf{x}) = \varepsilon(\mathbf{x})\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x})$. Inserting this into Eq. 7.4 cancels the explicit
 2484 dependence on the efficiency variation:

$$\mathcal{N} = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=0}^N \frac{\mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x}_i)}{\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x}_i)}. \quad (7.5)$$

2485 The advantage of this approach is that an explicit functional form for the efficiency
 2486 is not required by the fit, which is non-trivial to parameterise in five dimensions.
 2487 The disadvantage of this scheme is that it requires large samples of fully simulated
 2488 events, which is computationally expensive. This technique therefore relies on
 2489 the reliability of the simulation in modelling variations in the acceptance across
 2490 the phase space of the D decay.

2491 The effect of the limited size of the integration sample can be mitigated by
 2492 *importance sampling*. Consider the variance on a normalisation integral:

$$\text{Var}(\mathcal{N}) = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=0}^N \left(\frac{\mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x}_i)}{\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x}_i)} \right)^2 - \left(\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=0}^N \frac{\mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x}_i)}{\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x}_i)} \right)^2, \quad (7.6)$$

2493 and the standard error on the integral given by $\sigma(\mathcal{N}) = \sqrt{\text{Var}(\mathcal{N})/N}$. The
 2494 uncertainty is minimised by choosing a generator distribution such that $\mathcal{G}(\mathbf{x}) \approx \mathcal{P}(\mathbf{x})$,
 2495 which is to sample the function more frequently in regions where the value of the
 2496 function is large. The integration samples are therefore generated such that they
 2497 approximately match the distributions seen in real data. In practice, preliminary
 2498 signal models of each decay are used to generate the integration samples, which
 2499 are described in Sect. 5.7.

2500 7.1.2 Fit fractions

2501 The numerical values of coupling parameters depend strongly on various choices of
 2502 convention in the formalism. Therefore, it is common to define the fractions in the
 2503 data sample associated with each component of the amplitudes (fit fractions). In
 2504 the limit of narrow resonances, the fit fractions are analogous to relative branching
 2505 fractions. The fit fraction for component p is

$$I_p = \frac{\int d\mathbf{x} |\mathcal{M}_p(\mathbf{x})|^2}{\int d\mathbf{x} \sum_{ij} \mathcal{M}_i(\mathbf{x}) \mathcal{M}_j(\mathbf{x})^*}. \quad (7.7)$$

2506 For cascade processes, the different secondary isobars contribute coherently to
 2507 the fit fractions. The *partial* fit fractions for each sub-process are then defined
 2508 as the fit fraction with only the contributions from the parent isobar included
 2509 in the denominator.

2510 7.2 Dynamic binning

2511 A dynamic binning scheme is used both in the estimation of the quality of the fit and
 2512 to produce an underlying division of the phase space to produce binning schemes
 2513 for Sect. 7.8. The algorithm approximately follows that described in Ref. [42], with
 2514 additional steps to deal with only a small number of bins in the WS case that
 2515 would not be correctly handled. This can be seen by the fact that the scheme
 2516 in Ref. [42] produces 2^{dn} bins where d is the dimension of the problem (i.e. 5)
 2517 and n is an integer. Therefore, this approach results in an unsuitable number
 2518 of bins. For example, $n = 1$ would be 32 bins, which is too small to be useful,
 2519 whereas $n = 2$ yields 1024 bins which is too many given the size of the WS sample.
 2520 Hence, the procedure is modified with the second step described below in order
 2521 to increase the granularity. The procedure is designed to divide a problem into
 2522 N_{bins} bins with approximately an equal population in each, which should be of
 2523 order the minimum population N_{min} , and is as follows:

- 2524 1. For each bin that has a population of greater than $N_{\text{min}}2^d$ candidates:
 - 2525 (a) Split bin along one direction, such that half the data lies either side of
 2526 the division, ensuring that the bin width is greater than some minimum
 2527 width.
 - 2528 (b) Repeat in each direction.
 - 2529 (c) Return to (a)
- 2530 2. For each bin with a population less than $N_{\text{min}}2^d$ but greater than $2N_{\text{min}}$,
 2531 select the number of divisions d' such that $d' = \lfloor \log_2 \left(\frac{N}{N_{\text{min}}} \right) \rfloor$, i.e. the number
 2532 of divisions that can be made such that the population in each resulting bin
 2533 is greater than N_{min} . Then select the directions in which the data are least
 2534 uniform¹. Divide along these directions, also using the rule that half the
 2535 population should end up in each sub-bin after division.

¹Uniformity is defined in this case by the spread in nearest neighbour distances of candidates in the bin.

2536 This binning scheme therefore divides a population equally amongst $\lfloor \log_2 \left(\frac{N}{N_{min}} \right) \rfloor$
 2537 bins.

2538 7.2.1 Goodness-of-fit

2539 The quality of fits is quantified by computing a χ^2 metric. Candidates are binned us-
 2540 ing the dynamic binning scheme described in the previous section. The five invariant
 2541 mass-squared combinations are used as coordinates from the adaptive binning:

$$s_{\pi^+\pi^-\pi^+}, s_{K^-\pi^+}, s_{K^-\pi^-}, s_{\pi^+\pi^-}, s_{K^-\pi^+\pi^-}.$$

2542 The choice of coordinates becomes irrelevant in the limit of very small bins, as the
 2543 amplitude becomes a single-valued function of any five independent coordinates.
 2544 The χ^2 is defined as:

$$\chi^2 = \sum_{i \in \text{bins}} \frac{(N_i - \langle N_i \rangle)^2}{N_i + \bar{\sigma}_i^2}, \quad (7.8)$$

2545 where N_i is the observed number of candidates and $\langle N_i \rangle$ the expected number of
 2546 entries, determined by reweighting the integration sample with the fitted PDF:

$$\langle N_i \rangle = \sum_{j \in \text{bin}(i)} \omega_j. \quad (7.9)$$

2547 Here ω_j is the weight of integration event j . The statistical uncertainty from the
 2548 finite size of the integration sample, $\bar{\sigma}_i$, is included in the definition of the χ^2 ,
 2549 and is estimated as:

$$\bar{\sigma}_i^2 = \sum_{j \in \text{bin}(i)} \omega_j^2. \quad (7.10)$$

2550 7.3 Model construction

2551 The number of possible models that could be used to fit the amplitudes is extremely
 2552 large due to the large number of possible decay chains. This is due to the fact
 2553 that each decay chain contains a pair of isobars. For example, the $a_1(1260)$
 2554 resonance could potentially decay to the three pion final state via the following
 2555 six intermediate states

$$[\rho(770)^0 \pi^+]^{L=0,2}, [\rho(1450)^0 \pi^+]^{L=0,2}, [\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^+, f_2(1270) \pi^+.$$

2556 So for each of the cascade processes, there are a large number of different possibilities
 2557 for the intermediate decays of the resonances. There are also typically a large number
 2558 of different isobar and orbital angular momentum configurations for the quasi-two
 2559 body topology. The possible decay chains that are considered are discussed in
 2560 Sect. 7.4. A model of “reasonable” complexity will typically contain $\mathcal{O}(10)$ different
 2561 decay chains, and hence a naive estimate for the number of possible models is on
 2562 the order $\mathcal{O}(10^{17})$. It is therefore unfeasible to test any reasonable proportion of the
 2563 possible parameter space. Therefore, an algorithmic approach to model building
 2564 is adopted, the steps of which are listed below.

- 2565 1. Take a model and a set of possible additional decay chains. Perform a fit to
 2566 the data using this model adding one of these decay chains.
- 2567 2. If adding this decay chain improves the χ^2 per degree of freedom by at least
 2568 0.02, then retain the model for further consideration.
- 2569 3. On the first iteration, restrict the pool of decay chains that are added to the
 2570 model to those 40 contributions that give the largest improvements to the fit.
- 2571 4. Re-iterate the model-building procedure, using the 15 models with the best
 2572 fit quality as the initial model as starting points. Finish the procedure if no
 2573 model has improved significantly.

2574 For each decay mode, a different initially guessed model is used at the beginning
 2575 of the procedure based on the current knowledge of the decay mode. In the RS
 2576 case, the initially guessed model is chosen to be similar to the Mark III model, with
 2577 several additional decay chains included on the basis of other amplitude analyses:

- 2578 • The dominant decay chain in the Mark III model is $D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^+ K^-$, but
 2579 only including the $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow \rho\pi^+$ decay. The decay chains $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow$
 2580 $[\pi\pi]^{L=0}\pi$ and $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow [\rho\pi]^{L=2}$ are also included, as these have been
 2581 observed in the amplitude analysis of $D^0 \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-\pi^+\pi^-$ performed by the
 2582 FOCUS collaboration [86].
- 2583 • The $D^0 \rightarrow [K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$ decay chain, which is expected to be present
 2584 given the existence of the S-wave and D-wave like ² components found in the
 2585 Mark III model.

²The definitions of the S-wave and D-wave components in the Mark III model differ for the reasons discussed in Sect. 6.2.1.

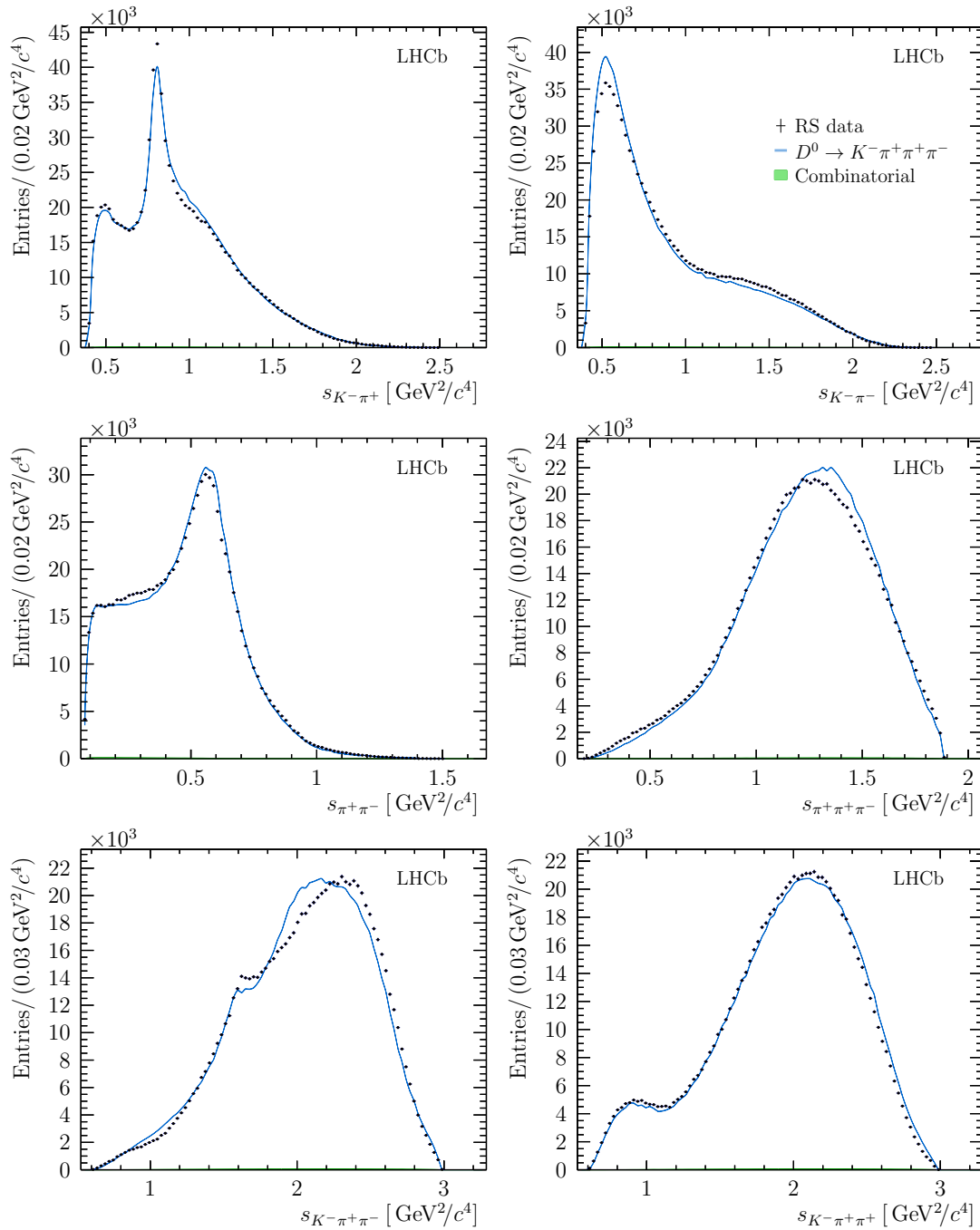


Figure 7.1: Distributions for six invariant-mass observables in the RS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$. The expectation from the initially guessed model is shown in blue. The total background contribution, which is very low, is shown in green.

- 2586 • The $D^0 \rightarrow K_2^*(1430)^-[K^-\pi^+\pi^-]\pi^+$ decay chain is expected based on the
2587 $D^0 \rightarrow K_2^*(1430)^-[K_s^0\pi^-]\pi^+$ branching ratio, which was measured to be
2588 $(3.4_{-1.0}^{+1.9}) \times 10^{-4}$ in an amplitude analysis performed by the BaBar collabora-
2589 tion [46]. Using the branching ratios of the $K_2^*(1430)^-$ reported in Ref. [34] and
2590 using isospin arguments, the fit fraction of $D^0 \rightarrow K_2^*(1430)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-] \pi^+$
2591 should be $\approx 0.5\%$.
- 2592 • The decay $D^0 \rightarrow K_1(1400)^-\pi^+$ is expected to be present as the $K_1(1270)$
2593 and $K_1(1400)$ are mixtures of the 1^1P_1 and 1^3P_1 quark states as discussed in
2594 Sect. 2.6. Hence, as couplings are expected to be between quark eigenstates
2595 rather than mass eigenstates, if the $K_1(1270)$ is present, the $K_1(1400)$ must
2596 also be present.
- 2597 • The four-body non-resonant term included in the Mark III model is replaced
2598 with a two-body scalar-scalar term represented by a product of $\pi\pi$ and $K\pi$
2599 K-matrices.

2600 Invariant-mass distributions for this preliminary fit are shown in Fig. 7.1.

2601 The initial model for the WS decay mode is found by inspecting invariant-mass
2602 projections as there is no existing amplitude model, and in general few models of
2603 doubly Cabibbo-suppressed D^0 decays on which to base any assumptions. The
2604 only clear contributions in the invariant-mass projections are from the $K^*(892)^0$
2605 and $\rho(770)$ resonances. The quasi two-body contributions should be roughly
2606 comparable between WS and RS amplitudes, hence it is presumed that this is
2607 a $D^0 \rightarrow K^*(892)^0\rho(770)$ contribution, which is included in the default model in
2608 all three orbital angular momentum states. Using a similar argument, a two-body
2609 scalar-scalar term modelled by a product of K matrices is also included in the default
2610 WS model as this is found to have a considerable contribution to the RS decay
2611 mode. Invariant-mass distributions for this preliminary fit are shown in Fig. 7.2.

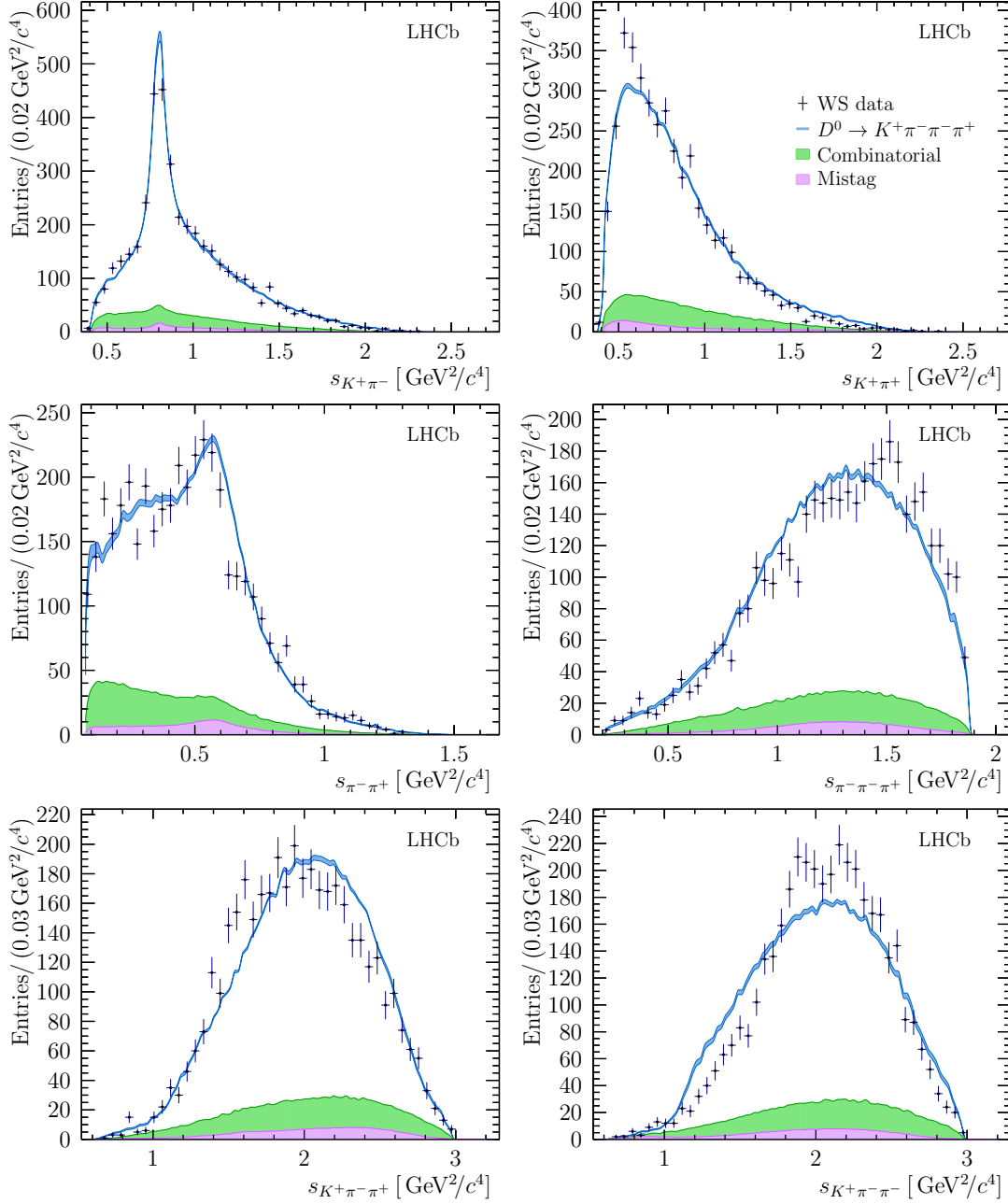


Figure 7.2: Distributions for six invariant-mass observables in the WS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$. The expectation from the initially guessed model is shown in blue. The total background contribution is shown in green.

2612 7.4 List of decay chains

2613 The list of possible decay chains is built from what is allowed by the relevant
 2614 conservation laws. Approximately one hundred different decay chains are included
 2615 as possible contributions to the model. Certain cascade decays already have
 2616 well known sub-branching ratios. For example, although the $K_1(1400)$ decays
 2617 almost exclusively via the $K^*(892)$, the various decays of the $K_1(1400)$ are treated
 2618 separately without assumption about their branching ratios.

- 2619 • $D^0 \rightarrow Y_{\pi\pi} [\pi\pi] Y_{K\pi} [K\pi]$, where $Y_{\pi\pi}$ is one of the following states: $\rho(770)$,
 2620 $\rho(1450)$, $f_2(1270)$ or $[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$, and $Y_{K\pi}$ is one of the following: $K^*(892)^0$,
 2621 $K^*(1410)^0$, $K^*(1680)^0$, $K_2^*(1430)^0$ or $[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}$.

2622 The $[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$ and $[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}$ contributions are modelled using K matrices.
 2623 In cases with a scalar contribution and a radial recurrence of a vector state,
 2624 such as $\rho(1450)^0[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}$, the K matrix is fixed to be the same as the first
 2625 vector, i.e. the K-matrix parameters of $\rho(770)^0[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}$. For vector-vector
 2626 and vector-tensor contributions, the different possible polarisation states are
 2627 included together in the model building. The contributions from the radial
 2628 excitations of the kaon are only included as a possibility when included with
 2629 the $\pi\pi$ S-wave, as the other decay chains involving this resonance, for example
 2630 the decay $K^*(1410)\rho(770)^0$, tend to have large interference terms, which
 2631 requires fine tuning with other amplitudes and hence are considered to be
 2632 unphysical.

- 2633 • $D^0 \rightarrow X_{\pi\pi\pi} [Y_{\pi\pi} [\pi\pi] \pi] K$, where $X_{\pi\pi\pi}$ is one of the following states: $a_1(1260)$,
 2634 $a_1(1640)$, $\pi(1300)$ or $a_2(1320)$.
- 2635 • $D^0 \rightarrow X_{K\pi\pi} [Y_{K\pi} [K\pi] \pi] \pi$, $D^0 \rightarrow X_{K\pi\pi} [Y_{\pi\pi} [\pi\pi] K] \pi$, where $X_{K\pi\pi}$ is one of
 2636 the following states: $K_1(1270)$, $K_1(1400)$, $K^*(1410)$, $K^*(1680)$, $K_2^*(1430)$ or
 2637 $K(1460)$.

2638 All of these states are considered under all possible orbital configurations that
 2639 obey the respective conservation laws.

7.5 Systematic uncertainties

Several sources of systematic uncertainty are considered. Experimental issues are discussed first, followed by uncertainties related to the model and the formalism.

All parameters in the fit have a systematic uncertainty originating from the finite size of the integration sample used in the likelihood minimisation. This effect is reduced by *importance sampling*. The events in the integration sample are distributed approximately according to the signal PDFs, which reduces the uncertainty on the normalisation integrals. The remaining uncertainty is estimated using a resampling technique. Half of the integration sample is randomly selected, and the fit performed using only this subsample. This is done many times, and the systematic uncertainty from the finite integration statistics is taken to be $1/\sqrt{2}$ the width of the distribution of fit parameters from this exercise.

There is an additional systematic uncertainty due to possible imperfect modelling of the detector and the underlying event in the simulation, which will in turn lead to incorrect efficiency corrections. These effects are estimated by sub-dividing the data set into equally populated bins by a variable in which the efficiency corrections may be expected to vary, which is chosen to be the transverse momentum of the D^0 -meson candidate. The data in these bins are then refitted independently. The fit results for each of these slices is then combined, and the absolute difference between this result and the nominal fit taken as an estimate of the uncertainty in any mis-modelling of the efficiency. Additional robustness checks are performed using the RS data-set, dividing the data by data-taking year and signal trigger category, and are found to be compatible within the assigned uncertainties.

The uncertainty due to the determination of the signal fraction and mistag fraction in each sample is measured by varying these fractions within the uncertainties found in the fit to the $m_{K\pi\pi\pi} : \Delta m$ plane.

Well-known parameters that are not floated in the fit, such as the $\rho(770)^0$ mass and width, are randomly varied according to the uncertainties given in Ref. [87], and the corresponding difference on the parameters in the fit given by the distribution of fit results are assigned as uncertainties. It is assumed that input correlations between these parameters are negligible. Radii of several particles used in the Blatt-Weisskopf form factor are varied using the same procedure. The D^0 radial parameter is varied by $\pm 0.5 \text{ GeV}^{-1}$.

2673 The uncertainty due to parametrisation of the combinatorial background in
 2674 the WS case is estimated using pseudo-experiments. A combination of MC signal
 2675 events generated with the final model and sideband events is used to approximately
 2676 simulate the data set. The composite data set is then refitted using the signal
 2677 model, and differences between the generator level and fitted values are taken as
 2678 the systematic uncertainty on the background parametrisation.

2679 The final choice of model is an additional source of systematic uncertainty. For
 2680 the coupling parameters, it is not meaningful to compare them between different
 2681 parameterisations, as these are by definition the parameters of a given model. It
 2682 is however useful to consider the impact the choice of parametrisation has on
 2683 fit fractions and the fitted masses and widths. Therefore, the model choice is
 2684 not included in the total systematic uncertainty, but its impact on the relevant
 2685 parameters is considered separately in Sect. 7.7.1. The impact of the model choice
 2686 on the description of the phase variations is considered in Sect. 7.8.

2687 The total systematic uncertainty is obtained by adding together the components
 2688 in quadrature. The total systematic uncertainty is significantly larger than the
 2689 statistical uncertainty on the RS fit, with the largest contributions coming from
 2690 the form factors that account for the finite size of the decaying mesons. For the
 2691 WS fit, the total systematic uncertainty is comparable to the statistical uncertainty,
 2692 with the largest uncertainty coming from the parametrisation of the combinatorial
 2693 background. A full breakdown of the different sources of systematic uncertainty
 2694 for all parameters is given in Appendix 8.

2695 7.6 The RS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$

2696 Invariant-mass projections for $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ are shown in Fig. 7.3 together
 2697 with the expected distribution from the model in Table 7.1. The χ^2 per degree-of-
 2698 freedom is calculated, with the only source of systematic uncertainty considered
 2699 from the finite size of the integration sample, and is found for the final model
 2700 to be ≈ 1.24 , indicating that the data are reasonably described by the model
 2701 given the very large sample size.

2702 Three cascade contributions, the $a_1(1260)^+$, the $K_1(1270)^-$ and $K(1460)^-$ are
 2703 modelled using the three-body running width treatment described in Sect. 6.3. The
 2704 masses and widths of these states are floated in the fit. The mass, width and
 2705 coupling parameters for these resonances are presented in Tables 7.2, 7.3 and 7.4.

Table 7.1: Table of fit fractions, coupling parameters and other quantities for the RS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$. Also given is the χ^2 per degree of freedom (ν) for the fit. The first uncertainty is statistical, the second systematic. Couplings are defined with respect to the coupling to the channel $D^0 \rightarrow [K^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$.

	Fit Fraction [%]	$ g $	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=0}$	$7.34 \pm 0.08 \pm 0.47$	$0.196 \pm 0.001 \pm 0.015$	$-22.4 \pm 0.4 \pm 1.6$
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$	$6.03 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.25$	$0.362 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.010$	$-102.9 \pm 0.4 \pm 1.7$
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$	$8.47 \pm 0.09 \pm 0.67$		
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=0}$	$0.61 \pm 0.04 \pm 0.17$	$0.162 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.025$	$-86.1 \pm 1.9 \pm 4.3$
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=1}$	$1.98 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.33$	$0.643 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.058$	$97.3 \pm 0.5 \pm 2.8$
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=2}$	$0.46 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.15$	$0.649 \pm 0.021 \pm 0.105$	$-15.6 \pm 2.0 \pm 4.1$
$\rho(770)^0 [K^- \pi^+]^{L=0}$	$0.93 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.05$	$0.338 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.011$	$73.0 \pm 0.8 \pm 4.0$
$\alpha_{3/2}$		$1.073 \pm 0.008 \pm 0.021$	$-130.9 \pm 0.5 \pm 1.8$
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 [\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0}$	$2.35 \pm 0.09 \pm 0.33$		
$f_{\pi\pi}$		$0.261 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.024$	$-149.0 \pm 0.9 \pm 2.7$
β_1		$0.305 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.046$	$65.6 \pm 1.5 \pm 4.0$
$a_1(1260)^+ K^-$	$38.07 \pm 0.24 \pm 1.38$	$0.813 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.025$	$-149.2 \pm 0.5 \pm 3.1$
$K_1(1270)^- \pi^+$	$4.66 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.39$	$0.362 \pm 0.004 \pm 0.015$	$114.2 \pm 0.8 \pm 3.6$
$K_1(1400)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	$1.15 \pm 0.04 \pm 0.20$	$0.127 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.011$	$-169.8 \pm 1.1 \pm 5.9$
$K_2^*(1430)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	$0.46 \pm 0.01 \pm 0.03$	$0.302 \pm 0.004 \pm 0.011$	$-77.7 \pm 0.7 \pm 2.1$
$K(1460)^- \pi^+$	$3.75 \pm 0.10 \pm 0.37$	$0.122 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.012$	$172.7 \pm 2.2 \pm 8.2$
$[K^- \pi^+]^{L=0} [\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0}$	$22.04 \pm 0.28 \pm 2.09$		
$\alpha_{3/2}$		$0.870 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.030$	$-149.2 \pm 0.7 \pm 3.5$
$\alpha_{K\eta'}$		$2.614 \pm 0.141 \pm 0.281$	$-19.1 \pm 2.4 \pm 12.0$
β_1		$0.554 \pm 0.009 \pm 0.053$	$35.3 \pm 0.7 \pm 1.6$
$f_{\pi\pi}$		$0.082 \pm 0.001 \pm 0.008$	$-147.0 \pm 0.7 \pm 2.2$
Sum of Fit Fractions	$98.29 \pm 0.37 \pm 0.84$		
χ^2/ν	$40483/32701 = 1.238$		

Table 7.2: Table of fit fractions and coupling parameters for the component involving the $a_1(1260)^+$ meson. The coupling parameters are defined with respect to the $a_1(1260)^+ \rightarrow \rho^0 \pi^-$ coupling. For each parameter, the first uncertainty is statistical, the second systematic.

$a_1(1260)^+ \quad m_0 = 1195.05 \pm 1.05 \pm 6.33 \text{ MeV}/c^2; \Gamma_0 = 422.01 \pm 2.10 \pm 12.72 \text{ MeV}/c^2$			
	Partial Fractions [%]	$ g $	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$
$\rho(770)^0 \pi^+$	$89.75 \pm 0.45 \pm 1.00$		
$[\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^+$	$2.42 \pm 0.06 \pm 0.12$		
β_1		$0.991 \pm 0.018 \pm 0.037$	$-22.2 \pm 1.0 \pm 1.2$
β_0		$0.291 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.017$	$165.8 \pm 1.3 \pm 3.1$
$f_{\pi\pi}$		$0.117 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.007$	$170.5 \pm 1.2 \pm 2.2$
$[\rho(770)^0 \pi^+]^{L=2}$	$0.85 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.06$	$0.582 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.027$	$-152.8 \pm 1.2 \pm 2.5$

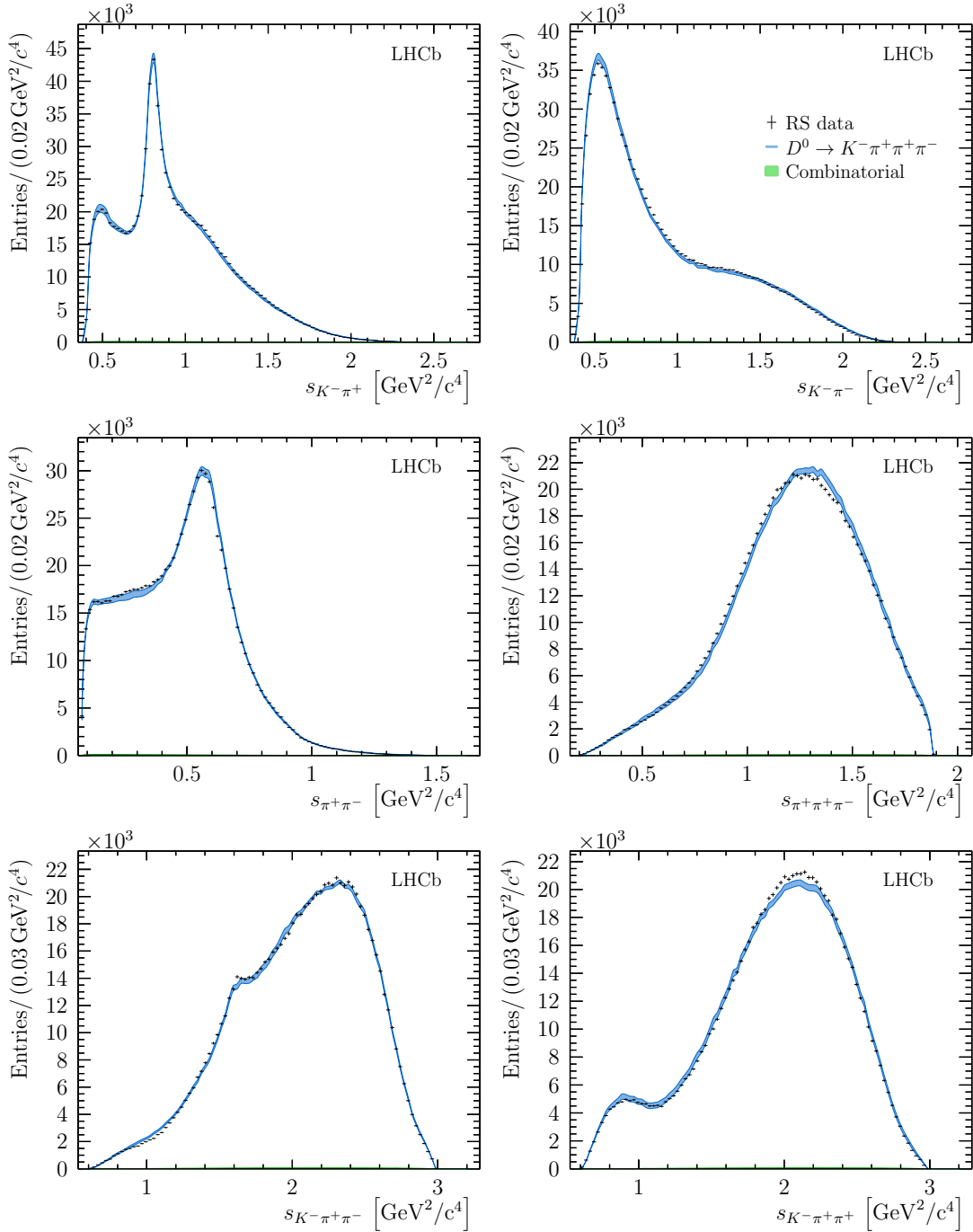


Figure 7.3: Distributions for six invariant-mass observables in the RS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$. Bands indicate the expectation from the model, with the width of the band indicating the total systematic uncertainty. The total background contribution, which is very low, is shown in green.

2706 The largest contribution is found to come from the axial vector $a_1(1260)^+$,
 2707 which is a result that was also found in the Mark III analysis. This decay
 2708 proceeds via the colour-favoured external W-emission diagram that is expected

Table 7.3: Table of fit fractions and coupling parameters for the component involving the $K_1(1270)$ meson. The coupling parameters are defined with respect to the $K_1(1270) \rightarrow \rho^0 K^-$ coupling. For each parameter, the first uncertainty is statistical, the second systematic.

$K_1(1270)^- \quad m_0 = 1289.81 \pm 0.56 \pm 1.66 \text{ MeV}/c^2; \Gamma_0 = 116.11 \pm 1.65 \pm 2.96 \text{ MeV}/c^2$			
	Partial Fractions [%]	$ g $	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$
$\rho(770)^0 K^-$	$96.30 \pm 1.64 \pm 6.61$		
$\rho(1450)^0 K^-$	$49.09 \pm 1.58 \pm 11.54$	$2.016 \pm 0.026 \pm 0.211$	$-119.5 \pm 0.9 \pm 2.3$
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-$	$27.08 \pm 0.64 \pm 2.82$	$0.388 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.033$	$-172.6 \pm 1.1 \pm 6.0$
$[K^- \pi^+]^{L=0} \pi^-$	$22.90 \pm 0.72 \pm 1.89$	$0.554 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.037$	$53.2 \pm 1.1 \pm 1.9$
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-]^{L=2}$	$3.47 \pm 0.17 \pm 0.31$	$0.769 \pm 0.021 \pm 0.048$	$-19.3 \pm 1.6 \pm 6.7$
$\omega(782) [\pi^+ \pi^-] K^-$	$1.65 \pm 0.11 \pm 0.16$	$0.146 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.009$	$9.0 \pm 2.1 \pm 5.7$

Table 7.4: Table of fit fractions and coupling parameters for the component involving the $K(1460)^-$ meson. The coupling parameters are defined with respect to the $K(1460)^- \rightarrow K^* \pi$ coupling. For each parameter, the first uncertainty is statistical, the second systematic.

$K(1460)^- \quad m_0 = 1482.40 \pm 3.58 \pm 15.22 \text{ MeV}/c^2 ; \Gamma_0 = 335.60 \pm 6.20 \pm 8.65 \text{ MeV}/c^2$			
	Partial Fractions [%]	$ g $	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-$	$51.39 \pm 1.00 \pm 1.71$		
$[\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0} K^-$	$31.23 \pm 0.83 \pm 1.78$		
f_{KK}		$1.819 \pm 0.059 \pm 0.189$	$-80.8 \pm 2.2 \pm 6.6$
β_1		$0.813 \pm 0.032 \pm 0.136$	$112.9 \pm 2.6 \pm 9.5$
β_0		$0.315 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.022$	$46.7 \pm 1.9 \pm 3.0$

2709 to dominate this final state.

2710 There are also large contributions from the different orbital angular momentum
 2711 configurations of the quasi two-body processes $D^0 \rightarrow K^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0$, with a
 2712 total contribution of around 20%. The polarisation structure of this component
 2713 is not consistent with naive expectations, with the D wave being the dominant
 2714 contribution and overall hierarchy $D > S > P$. This result may be compared with
 2715 that obtained for the study $D^0 \rightarrow \rho(770)^0 \rho(770)^0$ in Ref. [84], where the D-wave
 2716 polarisation of the amplitude was also found to be dominant.

2717 A significant contribution is found from the unconfirmed pseudo-scalar state
 2718 $K(1460)^-$. This resonance is a $2^1 S_0$ excitation of the kaon [35]. Evidence for this
 2719 state has been reported in the partial-wave analyses of the process $K^\pm p \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^+ \pi^- p$
 2720 [39, 38], manifesting itself as a 0^- state with mass $\approx 1400 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ and width
 2721 $\approx 250 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ coupling to the $K^*(892)^0 \pi$ and $[\pi^- \pi^+]^{L=0} K^-$ channels. The mass and
 2722 width reported in Table 7.4 are found to be somewhat larger than these previously

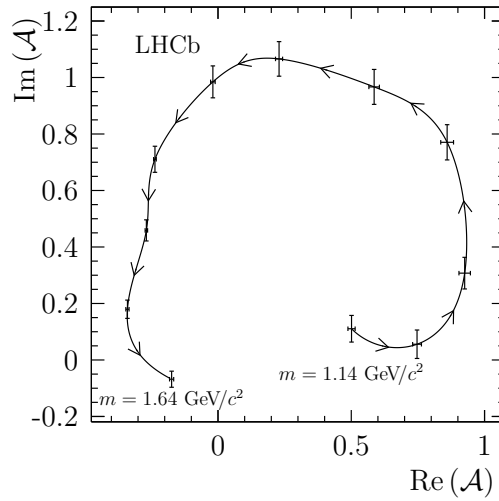


Figure 7.4: The Argand diagram for the model-independent partial-wave analysis (MIPWA) for the $K(1460)$ resonance. Points show the values of the function determined by the fit, with only statistical uncertainties shown.

2723 reported values. However these are values for a particular parametrisation of the
 2724 amplitude, and hence cannot be readily compared to other measurements. The
 2725 comparison can be made with the peak position and width calculated using the
 2726 amplitude, which are found to be $m_{\text{peak}} \approx 1420 \text{ MeV}/c^2$ and $\Gamma_{\text{peak}} \approx 260 \text{ MeV}/c^2$, and
 2727 are in excellent agreement with those quoted in Ref. [39]. The intermediate decays
 2728 of the $K(1460)^-$ are also found to be roughly consistent with previous studies, with
 2729 approximately equal widths to $K^*(892)^0 \pi$ and $[\pi\pi]^{L=0} K$. The resonant nature of
 2730 this state is confirmed using a model-independent partial-wave analysis (MIPWA),
 2731 following the method first used by the E791 collaboration [82, 83]. The relativistic
 2732 Breit-Wigner parametrisation is replaced with a set of complex values defined at 15
 2733 discrete positions in $s(K^- \pi^+ \pi^-)$, with the complex value at each point treated as
 2734 an independent pair of free parameters to be determined by the fit. The amplitude
 2735 is then modelled by interpolating between these values using cubic splines. The
 2736 Argand diagram for this amplitude is shown in Fig. 7.4, with points indicating the
 2737 values determined by the fit, and shows the phase motion expected from a resonance.

2738 Four-body weak decays contain amplitudes that are both even, such as $D \rightarrow$
 2739 $[VV']^{L=0,2}$, where V and V' are vector resonances, and odd, such as $D \rightarrow [VV']^{L=1}$,
 2740 under parity transformations. Interference between these amplitudes can give rise
 2741 to parity asymmetries which are different in D^0 and \bar{D}^0 decays. These asymmetries
 2742 are the result of strong-phase differences, but can be mistaken for CP asymmetries
 2743 [88]. Both sources of asymmetry can be studied by examining the distribution
 2744 of the angle between the decay planes of the two quasi two-body systems, ϕ ,

2745 which can be constructed from the three-momenta \mathbf{p} of the decay products in
2746 the rest frame of the D^0 meson as

$$\begin{aligned}\cos(\phi) &= \hat{\mathbf{n}}_{K^-\pi^+} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{n}}_{\pi^-\pi^+} \\ \sin(\phi) &= \frac{\mathbf{p}_{\pi^+} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{n}}_{K^-\pi^+}}{|\mathbf{p}_{\pi^+} \times \hat{\mathbf{p}}_{K^-\pi^+}|},\end{aligned}\tag{7.11}$$

2747 where $\hat{\mathbf{n}}_{ab}$ is the direction normal to the decay plane of a two-particle system ab ,

$$\hat{\mathbf{n}}_{ab} = \frac{\mathbf{p}_a \times \mathbf{p}_b}{|\mathbf{p}_a \times \mathbf{p}_b|},\tag{7.12}$$

2748 and $\hat{\mathbf{p}}_{K^-\pi^+}$ is the direction of the combined momentum of the $K^-\pi^+$ system.

2749 The interference between P -even and P -odd amplitudes averages to zero when
2750 integrated over the entire phase space. Therefore, the angle ϕ is studied in regions
2751 of phase space. The region of the $\bar{K}^*(892)^0$ and $\rho(770)^0$ resonances is studied as
2752 the largest P -odd amplitude is the decay $D^0 \rightarrow [\bar{K}^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$. Selecting
2753 this region allows the identical pions to be distinguished, by one being part of
2754 the $\bar{K}^*(892)^0$ -like system and the other in the $\rho(770)^0$ -like system. The data in
2755 this region are shown in Fig. 7.5, divided into quadrants of helicity angles, θ_A
2756 and θ_B , defined as the angle between the K^-/π^- and the D^0 in the rest frame
2757 of the $K^-\pi^+/\pi^-\pi^+$ system. The distributions show clear asymmetries under
2758 reflection about 180° , indicating parity nonconservation. However, equal and
2759 opposite asymmetries are observed in the CP -conjugate mode $\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$,
2760 indicating that these asymmetries originate from strong phases, rather than from
2761 CP -violating effects. Bands show the expected asymmetries based on the amplitude
2762 model, which has been constructed according to the CP -conserving hypothesis,
2763 and show reasonable agreement with the data.

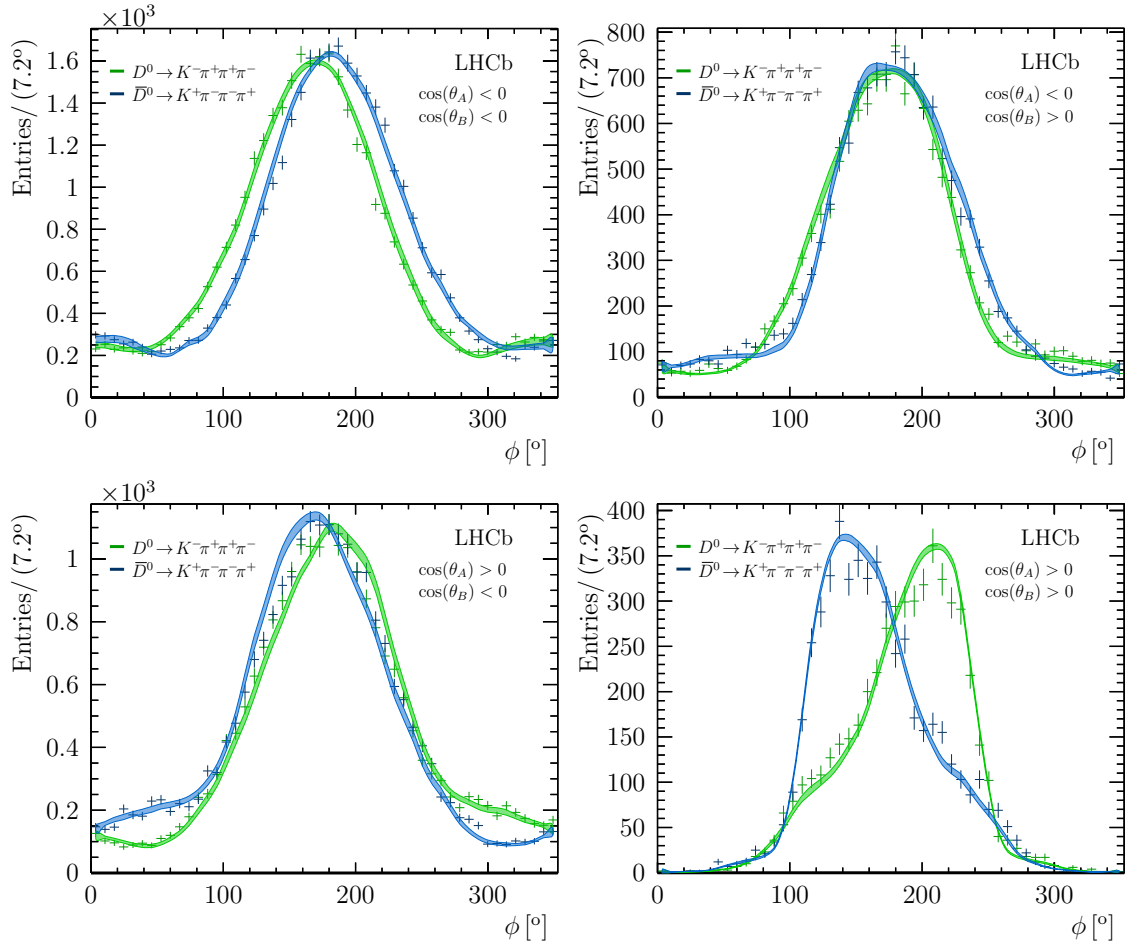


Figure 7.5: Parity violating distributions for the RS decay in the $\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0$ region defined by ± 35 MeV (± 100 MeV) mass windows about the nominal $\bar{K}^*(892)^0$ ($\rho(770)^0$) masses. Bands show the predictions of the fitted model including systematic uncertainties.

2764 7.7 The WS-mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$

2765 Invariant-mass distributions for $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ are shown in Fig. 7.6. Large
 2766 contributions are clearly seen in $s_{K^+ \pi^-}$ from the $K^*(892)^0$ resonance. The fit
 2767 fractions and amplitudes of the final model are given in Table ???. Dominant
 2768 contributions are found from the axial kaons, $K_1(1270)^+$ and $K_1(1400)^+$, which
 2769 are related to the same colour-favoured W-emission diagram that dominates the
 2770 RS mode, where it manifests itself in the $a_1(1260)^+ K^-$ component.

2771 The reduced χ^2 for the fit to the WS mode is ≈ 1.46 , which is notably worse
 2772 than for the RS mode despite the lower statistics. If the true WS amplitude
 2773 has a comparable structure to the RS amplitude, it contains several decay chains
 2774 at the $\mathcal{O}(1\%)$ level that cannot be satisfactorily resolved given the small sample

2775 size, and hence the quality of the WS fit is degraded by the absence of these
2776 sub-dominant contributions.

2777 The contribution from the $K_1(1400)^+$ is larger than that from the $K_1(1270)^+$.
2778 It is instructive to consider this behaviour in terms of the quark states, 1P_1 and 3P_1 .
2779 These quark states mix approximately equally to produce the mass eigenstates,

$$\begin{aligned} |K_1(1400)\rangle &= \cos(\theta_K)|^3P_1\rangle - \sin(\theta_K)|^1P_1\rangle \\ |K_1(1270)\rangle &= \sin(\theta_K)|^3P_1\rangle + \cos(\theta_K)|^1P_1\rangle, \end{aligned} \quad (7.13)$$

2780 where θ_K is a mixing angle. The mixing is somewhat less than maximal, with
2781 Ref. [36] reporting a preferred solution with $\theta_K = (33_{-2}^{+6})^\circ$. In the WS mode, the
2782 axial kaons are produced via a weak current, which is decoupled from the 1P_1 state in
2783 the SU(3) flavour-symmetry limit. If the mixing were maximal the mass eigenstates
2784 would be produced equally, but a smaller mixing angle results in a preference for
2785 the $K_1(1400)$, which is qualitatively consistent with the pattern seen in data. In
2786 the RS mode, the axial kaons are not produced by the external weak current, and
2787 hence there is no reason to expect either quark state to be preferred. The relatively
2788 small contribution from the $K_1(1400)$ to this final state is then understood as a
2789 consequence of approximately equal production of the quark states.

2790 The coupling parameters and shape parameters of the $K_1(1270)$ resonance are
2791 fixed to the values measured in the RS mode in the nominal fit. A fit is also
2792 performed with these coupling parameters freely varying, and they are found to
2793 be consistent with those measured in the RS mode.

2794 A large contribution is found from $D^0 \rightarrow \rho(1450)^0 K^*(892)^0$ in all models that
2795 describe the data well. This result is likely to be an effective representation of
2796 several different K^* production modes that are well approximated by this term.

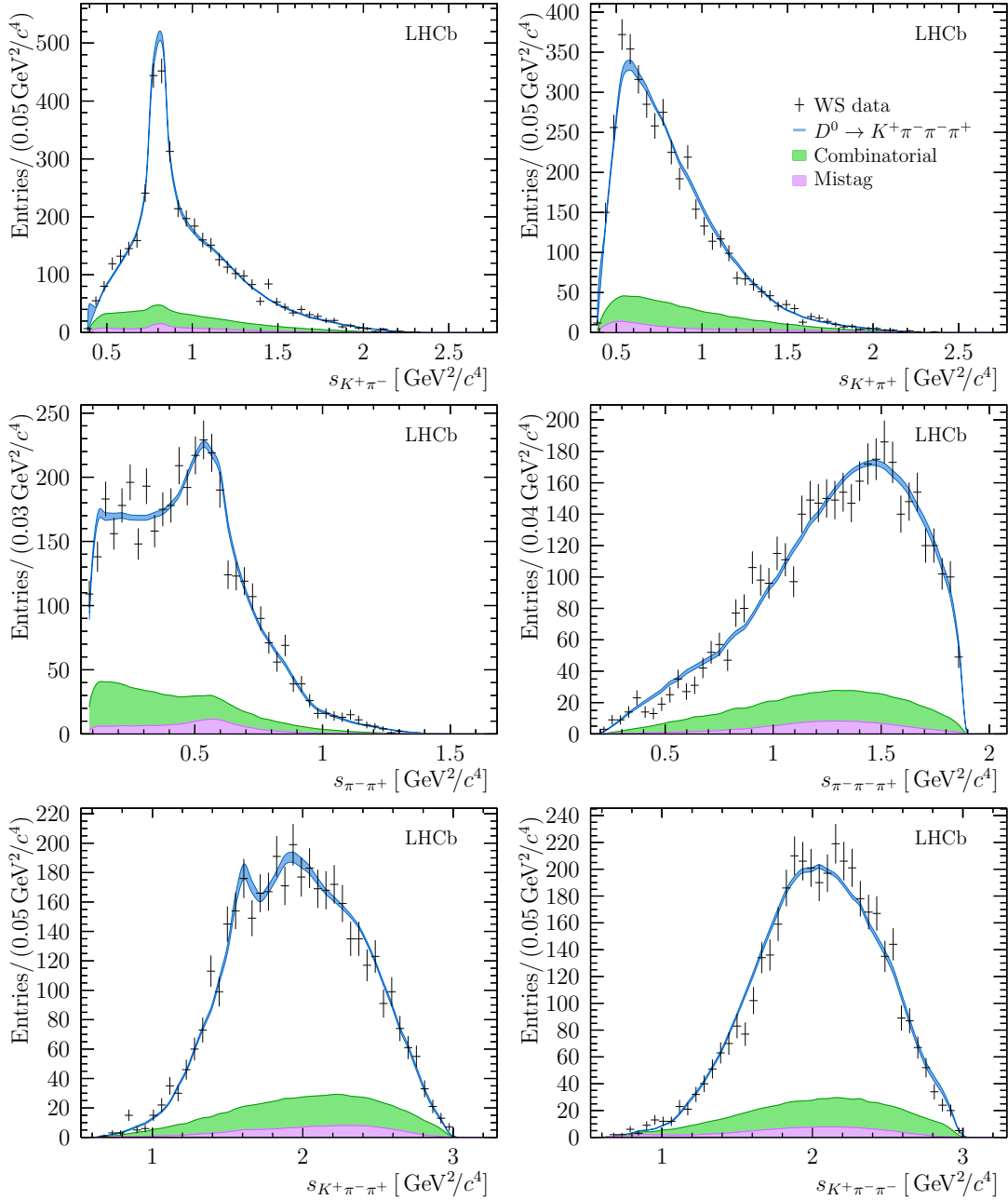


Figure 7.6: Distributions for six invariant-mass observables in the WS decay $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$. Bands indicate the expectation from the model, with the width of the band indicating the total systematic uncertainty. The total background contribution is shown as a filled area, with the lower region indicating the expected contribution from mistagged $\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ decays.

Table 7.5: Table of fit fractions, coupling parameters and other quantities for the WS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$. Also given is the χ^2 per degree-of-freedom (ν) for the fit. The first uncertainty is statistical, the second systematic. Couplings are defined with respect to the coupling to the channel $D^0 \rightarrow [K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$.

	Fit Fraction [%]	$ g $	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$
$[K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=0}$	$9.62 \pm 1.58 \pm 1.03$	$0.205 \pm 0.019 \pm 0.010$	$-8.5 \pm 4.7 \pm 4.4$
$[K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$	$8.42 \pm 0.83 \pm 0.57$	$0.390 \pm 0.029 \pm 0.006$	$-91.4 \pm 4.7 \pm 4.1$
$[K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$	$10.19 \pm 1.03 \pm 0.79$		
$[\rho(1450)^0K^*(892)^0]^{L=0}$	$8.16 \pm 1.24 \pm 1.69$	$0.541 \pm 0.042 \pm 0.055$	$-21.8 \pm 6.5 \pm 5.5$
$K_1(1270)^+\pi^-$	$18.15 \pm 1.11 \pm 2.30$	$0.653 \pm 0.040 \pm 0.058$	$-110.7 \pm 5.1 \pm 4.9$
$K_1(1400)^+[K^*(892)^0\pi^+]\pi^-$	$26.55 \pm 1.97 \pm 2.13$	$0.560 \pm 0.037 \pm 0.031$	$29.8 \pm 4.2 \pm 4.6$
$[K^+\pi^-]^{L=0}[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$	$20.90 \pm 1.30 \pm 1.50$		
$\alpha_{3/2}$		$0.686 \pm 0.043 \pm 0.022$	$-149.4 \pm 4.3 \pm 2.9$
β_1		$0.438 \pm 0.044 \pm 0.030$	$-132.4 \pm 6.5 \pm 3.0$
$f_{\pi\pi}$		$0.050 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.005$	$74.8 \pm 7.5 \pm 5.3$
Sum of Fit Fractions	$101.99 \pm 2.90 \pm 2.85$		
χ^2/ν	$350/239 = 1.463$		

2797 7.7.1 Alternative parameterisations

2798 The model finding procedure outlined in Sect. 7.3 results in ensembles of parame-
 2799 terisations of comparable quality and complexity. The decay chains included in the
 2800 models discussed in the previous sections are included in the majority of models
 2801 of acceptable quality, with further variations made by addition of further small
 2802 components. The fraction of models in this ensemble containing a given decay
 2803 mode are shown in Table 7.6 for the RS decay mode, with the average fit fraction
 2804 associated with each decay chain also tabulated. The ensemble of RS models
 2805 consists of about 200 models with χ^2 per degree-of-freedom varying between 1.21
 2806 and 1.26. Many of the decay chains in the ensemble include resonances, such as
 2807 the $K_1(1270)$, decaying via radially excited vector mesons, such as the $\rho(1450)^0$
 2808 and $K^*(1410)^0$ mesons. In particular, the decay $mK_1(1270)^- \rightarrow \rho(1450)^0 K^-$ is
 2809 included in the models discussed in Sect. 7.6, 7.7 and is found in the majority of
 2810 the models in the ensemble. This decay channel of the $K_1(1270)^-$ meson has a
 2811 strong impact at low dipion masses due to the very large width of the $\rho(1450)^0$, of
 2812 about 400 MeV/c. As this decay mode has not been studied extensively in other
 2813 production mechanisms of the $K_1(1270)^-$, and the ensemble is not in complete
 2814 agreement as to its presence, it is perhaps useful to consider models that do not
 2815 include this decay chain as an alternative parametrisation. The situation can be
 2816 clarified with independent measurements of the properties of these resonances.
 2817 The $a_1(1640)^+$ resonance is also found in many models in the ensemble, and is
 2818 likely to be present at some level despite being outside of the phase space. This
 2819 resonance will strongly interfere with the dominant $a_1(1260)^+$ component, and as
 2820 the parameters of this resonance are poorly known, improved external inputs will
 2821 be required to correctly constrain this component.

2822 The coupling parameters cannot strictly be compared between different models,
 2823 as in many cases these coupling parameters have a different interpretation depending
 2824 on the choice of model. However, it is instructive to consider how the fit fractions
 2825 vary depending on the choice of model, which are shown in Table 7.7. It is also
 2826 useful to consider how the choice of model impacts upon the fitted masses and
 2827 widths, which is shown in Table 7.8. The values for the model shown in Sect. 7.6
 2828 are also shown, which has compatible values with the ensemble. The variation with
 2829 respect to the choice of model is characterised by the RMS of the parameters in
 2830 the ensemble, and is of a comparable size to the combined systematic uncertainty
 2831 from other sources on these parameters.

Table 7.6: Components present in alternative parameterisations of the RS decay mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$, with the fraction of models in the ensemble that contain this decay mode and the associated average fit fraction. Only components that contribute to $> 5\%$ of the models in the ensemble are shown.

Mode	Fraction of models [%]	$\langle \mathcal{F} \rangle$ [%]
$K_1(1400)^- [\rho(1450)^0 K^-] \pi^+$	13.6	0.319
$K(1460)^- [K_2^*(1430)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.060
$K^*(1680)^- [\rho(770)^0 K^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.068
$K_2^*(1430)^- [\rho(1450)^0 K^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.096
$K_2^*(1430)^- [K^*(1680)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.133
$K_2^*(1430)^- [K^*(1410)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.123
$K_1(1400)^- [\rho(770)^0 K^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.449
$K_1(1400)^- [K^*(1410)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	13.1	0.112
$a_1(1640)^+ [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^+ K^-$	12.1	2.468

2832 The $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$ ensemble consists of 108 models, all of which have a χ^2
2833 per degree-of-freedom of less than 1.45, the best models in the ensemble having a
2834 χ^2 per degree-of-freedom of about 1.35. The fraction of models in this ensemble
2835 containing a given decay mode are shown in Table 7.9. The fit quality of the
2836 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$ models is notably worse than that of the $D^0 \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$
2837 models, as there are likely to be many smaller decay modes missing from the
2838 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$ model that cannot be satisfactorily resolved given the current
2839 sample size. In particular, there should be percent level contributions from some of
2840 the decay chains present in the $D^0 \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$ mode, such as $D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^- K^+$
2841 and $D^0 \rightarrow K^*(892) [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$. In addition to the marginal decays of the $K_1(1270)$
2842 present in the $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$ ensemble, the models suggest contributions from
2843 the $K^*(1680)$, which due to its large width and position on the edge of the phase
2844 space, resembles a quasi-nonresonant component. As is the case for the large
2845 $D^0 \rightarrow K^*(892)^0 \rho(1450)$ component, this contribution is likely to be mimicking
2846 several smaller decay channels that cannot be resolved with the current sample size.

Table 7.7: Dependence of fit fractions (and partial fractions) on the final choice of RS model. This dependence is expressed as the mean value and the RMS of the values in the ensemble. Also shown are the fit fractions of the baseline model presented in Sect. 7.6.

	(Partial) Fraction [%]		
	Baseline	Ensemble Mean RMS	
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=0}$	$7.34 \pm 0.08 \pm 0.47$	7.10 ± 0.13	
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$	$6.03 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.25$	6.00 ± 0.12	
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$	$8.47 \pm 0.09 \pm 0.67$	8.42 ± 0.20	
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=0}$	$0.61 \pm 0.04 \pm 0.17$	0.65 ± 0.13	
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=1}$	$1.98 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.33$	1.91 ± 0.06	
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=2}$	$0.46 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.15$	0.46 ± 0.05	
$\rho(770)^0 [K^- \pi^+]^{L=0}$	$0.93 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.05$	1.08 ± 0.12	
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 [\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0}$	$2.35 \pm 0.09 \pm 0.33$	2.19 ± 0.34	
$a_1(1260)^+ K^-$	$38.07 \pm 0.24 \pm 1.38$	38.06 ± 2.08	
$\rho(770)^0 \pi^+$	$89.75 \pm 0.45 \pm 1.00$	86.66 ± 4.52	
$[\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^+$	$2.42 \pm 0.06 \pm 0.12$	3.01 ± 1.02	
$[\rho(770)^0 \pi^+]^{L=2}$	$0.85 \pm 0.03 \pm 0.06$	0.80 ± 0.10	
$K_1(1270)^- \pi^+$	$4.66 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.39$	4.74 ± 0.24	
$\rho(770)^0 K^-$	$96.30 \pm 1.64 \pm 6.61$	77.04 ± 9.22	
$\rho(1450)^0 K^-$	$49.09 \pm 1.58 \pm 11.54$	34.13 ± 8.19	
$\omega(782) [\pi^+ \pi^-] K^-$	$1.65 \pm 0.11 \pm 0.16$	1.70 ± 0.15	
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-$	$27.08 \pm 0.64 \pm 2.82$	26.95 ± 2.52	
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-]^{L=2}$	$3.47 \pm 0.17 \pm 0.31$	3.57 ± 0.49	
$[K^- \pi^+] \pi^-$	$22.90 \pm 0.72 \pm 1.89$	20.39 ± 2.89	
$K_1(1400)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	$1.15 \pm 0.04 \pm 0.20$	1.23 ± 0.10	
$K_2^*(1430)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-] \pi^+$	$0.46 \pm 0.01 \pm 0.03$	0.44 ± 0.04	
$K(1460)^- \pi^+$	$3.75 \pm 0.10 \pm 0.37$	3.63 ± 0.27	
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \pi^-$	$51.39 \pm 1.00 \pm 1.71$	53.18 ± 1.52	
$[\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0} K^-$	$31.23 \pm 0.83 \pm 1.78$	30.46 ± 1.19	
$[K^- \pi^+]^{L=0} [\pi^+ \pi^-]^{L=0}$	$22.04 \pm 0.28 \pm 2.09$	21.87 ± 1.51	

Table 7.8: Dependence of fitted masses and widths on the final choice of RS model. This dependence is expressed as the mean value and the RMS of the values in the ensemble. The values found for the baseline model presented in Sect. 7.6 are listed for comparison

	Baseline	Ensemble
$m(a_1(1260)^+)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$1195.05 \pm 1.05 \pm 6.33$	1196.85 ± 6.21
$\Gamma(a_1(1260)^+)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$422.01 \pm 2.10 \pm 12.72$	420.92 ± 8.70
$m(K_1(1270)^-)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$1289.81 \pm 0.56 \pm 1.66$	1287.77 ± 3.97
$\Gamma(K_1(1270)^-)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$116.11 \pm 1.65 \pm 2.96$	114.27 ± 7.57
$m(K(1460)^-)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$1482.40 \pm 3.58 \pm 15.22$	1474.60 ± 12.28
$\Gamma(K(1460)^-)[\text{MeV}/c^2]$	$335.60 \pm 6.20 \pm 8.65$	333.89 ± 12.88

Table 7.9: Components present in alternative parameterisations of the WS decay mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+$, with the fraction of models in the ensemble that contain this decay mode and the associated average fit fraction. Only components that contribute to $> 5\%$ of the models in the ensemble are shown.

Decay Chain	Fraction of models [%]	$\langle \mathcal{F} \rangle$ [%]
$K_1(1270)^+ [\rho(770)^0 K^+]^{L=2} \pi^-$	47.2	1.21
$K^*(1680)^+ [K^*(1680)^0 \pi^+] \pi^-$	38.0	2.89
$K^*(1680)^+ [\rho(770)^0 K^+] \pi^-$	33.3	2.58
$a_1(1640)^- [[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0} \pi^-] K^+$	27.8	3.24
$K^*(1680)^+ [\rho(1450)^0 K^+] \pi^-$	22.2	2.53
$K_1(1270)^+ [K^*(1410)^0 \pi^+]^{L=2} \pi^-$	22.2	0.60
$K_1(1270)^+ [[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0} K^+] \pi^-$	21.3	0.26
$K^*(1680)^+ [K^*(1410)^0 \pi^+] \pi^-$	17.6	1.98
$\rho(770)^0 [K^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$	17.6	3.49
$K^*(1680)^+ [K_2^*(1430)^0 \pi^+] \pi^-$	16.7	0.82
$K_1(1400)^+ [[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0} K^+] \pi^-$	13.0	0.29
$K_2^*(1430)^0 [K^+\pi^-] \rho(770)^0$	13.0	0.35
$K^*(1410)^0 \rho(770)^0$	10.2	3.50

7.8 Coherence factor

2847

2848 The coherence factor $R_{K3\pi}$ and average strong-phase difference $\delta_{K3\pi}$ were de-
 2849 fined in Ch. 2 as measures of the phase-space averaged interference properties
 2850 between suppressed and favoured amplitudes. As a reminder of the definitions
 2851 of these parameters,

$$R_{K3\pi} e^{-i\delta_{K3\pi}} = \frac{\int d\mathbf{x} \mathcal{A}_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+}(\mathbf{x}) \mathcal{A}_{\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+}^*(\mathbf{x})}{A_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+} A_{\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+\pi^-\pi^-\pi^+}} \quad (7.14)$$

2852 where $\mathcal{A}_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+}$ is the amplitude of the suppressed decay and $\mathcal{A}_{\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+}$
 2853 is the CP -conjugate of the favoured amplitude. The averaged suppressed am-
 2854 plitude is given by

$$A_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+}^2 = \int d\mathbf{x} |\mathcal{A}_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+}(\mathbf{x})|^2, \quad (7.15)$$

2855 with a comparable expression for the favoured amplitude. The average ratio of
 2856 amplitudes is an additional useful parameter, and was defined as

$$r_{K3\pi} = A_{D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+} / A_{\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+}. \quad (7.16)$$

2857 As discussed in Ch. 2, knowledge of these parameters is necessary when making
 2858 use of the decays in an inclusive manner in $B^- \rightarrow DK^-$ transitions for measuring
 2859 the unitarity angle γ [89], and can also be exploited for charm mixing studies.
 2860 Chapter 3 presented a determination of these parameters using observables with
 2861 direct sensitivity to the coherence factor and related parameters that have been
 2862 measured at the $\psi(3770)$ resonance with CLEO-c data [43], and through charm
 2863 mixing at LHCb [42]. The analysis of those measurements presented in Ch. 3 yielded

$$\begin{aligned} R_{K3\pi} &= 0.43_{-0.13}^{+0.17} \\ \delta_{K3\pi} &= (128_{-17}^{+28})^\circ \\ r_{K3\pi} &= (5.49 \pm 0.06) \times 10^{-2}. \end{aligned} \quad (7.17)$$

2864 The models presented in this thesis can be used to calculate the model-derived
 2865 coherence factor:

$$R_{K3\pi}^{\text{mod}} = 0.459 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.020. \quad (7.18)$$

2866 where the first uncertainty is statistical, and the second is the systematic uncertainty
 2867 from the choice of WS model, which is assigned by taking the spread in values from
 2868 an ensemble of alternative models from the model building algorithm, requiring that
 2869 models have a χ^2 per degree of freedom of less than 1.5, and that all unconstrained
 2870 components in the fit have a significance of $> 2\sigma$. This result is in good agreement
 2871 with the direct measurement. There is no sensitivity to $\delta_{K3\pi}$ and $r_{K3\pi}$ as the
 2872 amplitude models are evaluated separately for RS and WS decays.

2873 The stability of the local phase description can also be verified by evaluating
 2874 the model-derived coherence factor and associated parameters in different regions
 2875 of phase space. This is equivalent to changing the definition of Eq. 7.14 such that
 2876 integrals are performed over some limited region rather than the entire phase space.
 2877 In this case, it is also possible to determine the local values of $\delta_{K3\pi}$ and $r_{K3\pi}$ relative

Table 7.10: Summary of coherence factor and average strong-phase difference with spread of coherence factor and average strong phase from choice of WS model characterised with the RMS of the distribution assigned as the uncertainty.

Bin	$R_{K3\pi}$	$\delta_{K3\pi}[^{\circ}]$	$r_{K3\pi} \times 10^{-2}$
1	0.701 ± 0.017	169 ± 3	5.287 ± 0.034
2	0.691 ± 0.016	151 ± 1	5.679 ± 0.032
3	0.726 ± 0.010	133 ± 1	6.051 ± 0.032
4	0.742 ± 0.008	117 ± 1	6.083 ± 0.030
5	0.783 ± 0.005	102 ± 2	5.886 ± 0.031
6	0.764 ± 0.007	84 ± 3	5.727 ± 0.033
7	0.424 ± 0.013	26 ± 3	5.390 ± 0.061
8	0.473 ± 0.030	-149 ± 7	4.467 ± 0.065

2878 to the phase-space averaged values. Therefore, overall normalisation factors are
 2879 fixed such that the central value of the direct measurement is correctly reproduced.

2880 In order to define these regions, the space is divided into hypercubes using the
 2881 algorithm described in Sect. 7.2. The division is done such that the hypercubes
 2882 cannot be smaller in any dimension than $50 \text{ MeV}/c^2$. The hypercubes are grouped
 2883 into bins of average phase difference between the two amplitudes in the bin, using
 2884 the baseline amplitude models described in Sect. 7.6 and Sect. 7.7. These bins
 2885 will not generally be contiguous in the phase space, and therefore visualising the
 2886 bins is not instructive. The range $[-180^{\circ}, 180^{\circ}]$ in strong-phase difference is split
 2887 into eight bins. The division of this range is done such that each bin is expected
 2888 to have an approximately equal population of WS events within the bin. The
 2889 coherence factors, average strong-phase differences and their RMS spread arising
 2890 from the choice of WS model are summarised in Table 7.10. Good stability is
 2891 observed, which is a consequence of the dominant features of the amplitude being
 2892 common for all models, and gives confidence to using the models presented in this
 2893 paper to define regions of interest for future binned measurements of γ or studies
 2894 of charm mixing. The relatively high coherence factor in some regions of phase-
 2895 space demonstrates the potential improvements in sensitivity to measurements of
 2896 CP -violating observables for such measurements.

8

2897

2898

Conclusions and outlook

2899 Several studies of the four-body decays $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp$ have been presented in
2900 this thesis, including both model-independent determinations of hadronic factors
2901 used in studies of the unitarity angle γ and detailed model-dependent studies of
2902 the resonant structure of the two decay modes.

2903 A model independent determination of the coherence factor and associated
2904 hadronic parameters was presented in Ch. 3 using the CLEO-c data set and
2905 constraints from charm mixing, and represents a significant improvement on previous
2906 determinations of these parameters.

2907 Chapter 7 presents the most precise amplitude analysis of the $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$
2908 decay mode to date, with one of the largest samples of any charm decay mode ever
2909 studied using an amplitude analysis. This revealed several notable results, including
2910 a quasi-model-independent confirmation of the first radial excitation of the kaon, the
2911 $K(1460)$. The first amplitude analysis ever of the decay mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$
2912 was also presented, which is also one of the few studies of a resonant sub-structure of
2913 a doubly Cabibbo-suppressed amplitude. Both amplitudes are found to have large
2914 contributions from axial resonances, the decays $D^0 \rightarrow a_1(1260)^+ K^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow$
2915 $K_1(1270/1400)^+ \pi^-$ for $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$, respectively. This
2916 is consistent with the general picture that colour-favoured W-emission topologies
2917 are crucial in describing these decays.

2918 The coherence factor is calculated using the two amplitude models, and found to
2919 be in excellent agreement with the model-independent determination described in

2920 Ch. 3. The values of the coherence factor both globally and in regions of phase space
 2921 are found to be relatively stable with respect to alternative parameterisations of the
 2922 amplitudes. This gives confidence that these models provide stable predictions that
 2923 can be used to improve knowledge of several important electroweak parameters.
 2924 Firstly, the rates of the decay modes $B^\pm \rightarrow D[K^\mp \pi^\pm \pi^\pm \pi^\mp]K^\pm$ can be studied locally
 2925 in the four-body phase-space of the D -meson decay in order to improve knowledge
 2926 of the unitarity angle γ . Secondly, the time evolution of the WS decay mode
 2927 $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ amplitude can be exploited to make improved measurements
 2928 of the charm mixing parameters (x, y) . There are several possible strategies for
 2929 exploiting these models in such measurements. The first is to make model-dependent
 2930 measurements of the various electroweak parameters of interest. However, great
 2931 care must be taken in the evaluation of systematic uncertainties associated with the
 2932 theoretical limitations of amplitude models. Hence, a perhaps preferable strategy is
 2933 to use the models to inspire binning schemes in which to make model-independent
 2934 measurements of the CP -violating phase γ and of charm mixing, utilising external
 2935 constraints on the coherence factors and average strong-phase differences in these
 2936 bins from CLEO-c or perhaps BES III.

2937 From the perspective of future improvements to these models, larger sample
 2938 sizes are unlikely to improve knowledge of the RS amplitude. However, the
 2939 robustness of models can perhaps be improved by considering the amplitudes
 2940 of several different decay modes simultaneously. For example, including the coupled
 2941 channels $D^0 \rightarrow K^\mp K^\pm K^\mp \pi^\pm$ in a global fit, which despite its limited phase space
 2942 perhaps offers interesting additional constraints on the coupled isoscalar states. An
 2943 alternative approach is to make comparisons with decay modes where some ampli-
 2944 tudes can be related by isospin arguments, such as $D^0 \rightarrow K^*(892)^0 [K_S^0 \pi^0] \pi^+ \pi^-$.
 2945 Knowledge of the WS amplitude will surely be improved by studies with larger
 2946 sample sizes, for which the model described in this thesis provides a solid starting
 2947 point. Such studies will be required to take into account the effects of $D^0 \bar{D}^0$ mixing.

2948 Measurements of the unitarity triangle are entering an era of precision where
 2949 discrepancies with the Standard Model may be observed. An improved understand-
 2950 ing of multi-body hadronic systems, such as those presented in this thesis, is one
 2951 of the myriad of efforts necessary to reduce uncertainties to the level where new
 2952 physics sources of CP -violation can be observed.

Appendices

2954 The various contributions assigned for different systematic uncertainties are
 2955 summarised in this appendix by a series of tables. The legend for these is given in
 2956 Table 1, including which sources of uncertainty are considered on each decay mode.
 2957 The breakdown of systematic uncertainties for the RS decay $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ for
 2958 coupling parameters, fit fractions and other parameters are given in Tables 2 and 3
 2959 for the quasi two-body decay chains and cascade decay chains, respectively. The
 2960 systematic uncertainties for the WS mode $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ are given in Table 4
 2961 for both coupling parameters and the fit fractions.

Table 1: Legend for systematic uncertainties, including whether this sources of uncertainty is considered on the RS/WS decay mode.

	Description	RS	WS
I	Efficiency variations	✓	
II	Simulation statistics	✓	✓
III	Masses and widths	✓	✓
IV	Form factor radii	✓	✓
V	Background fraction	✓	✓
VI	Background parameterisation		✓
VII	RS parameters		✓

Table 2: Systematic uncertainties on the RS decay coupling parameters and fit fractions for quasi two-body decay chains.

			I	II	III	IV	V
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0$	\mathcal{F}	$7.340 \pm 0.084 \pm 0.637$	0.426	0.050	0.063	0.466	0.025
	$ g $	$0.196 \pm 0.001 \pm 0.015$	0.000	0.001	0.001	0.015	0.000
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-22.363 \pm 0.361 \pm 1.644$	1.309	0.239	0.119	0.955	0.075
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$	\mathcal{F}	$6.031 \pm 0.049 \pm 0.436$	0.358	0.029	0.061	0.239	0.006
	$ g $	$0.362 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.010$	0.002	0.001	0.002	0.009	0.000
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-102.907 \pm 0.380 \pm 1.667$	1.431	0.224	0.321	0.760	0.025
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0 \rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$ $\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0$	\mathcal{F}	$8.475 \pm 0.086 \pm 0.826$	0.492	0.051	0.059	0.659	0.023
	\mathcal{F}	$0.608 \pm 0.040 \pm 0.165$	0.061	0.032	0.134	0.065	0.019
	$ g $	$0.162 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.025$	0.007	0.004	0.018	0.015	0.003
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=1}$	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-86.122 \pm 1.852 \pm 4.345$	1.933	1.570	2.485	2.152	1.368
	\mathcal{F}	$1.975 \pm 0.029 \pm 0.351$	0.115	0.017	0.315	0.103	0.003
	$ g $	$0.643 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.058$	0.001	0.003	0.050	0.029	0.001
$[\rho(1450)^0 \bar{K}^*(892)^0]^{L=2}$	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$97.304 \pm 0.516 \pm 2.770$	2.249	0.288	1.341	0.854	0.031
	\mathcal{F}	$0.455 \pm 0.028 \pm 0.163$	0.078	0.016	0.090	0.110	0.004
	$ g $	$0.649 \pm 0.021 \pm 0.105$	0.052	0.011	0.063	0.065	0.003
$\rho(770)^0 [K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}$	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-15.564 \pm 1.960 \pm 4.109$	1.208	1.323	2.631	2.484	0.762
	\mathcal{F}	$0.926 \pm 0.032 \pm 0.083$	0.069	0.019	0.016	0.039	0.006
	$ g $	$0.338 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.011$	0.000	0.004	0.002	0.010	0.002
$\alpha_{3/2}$	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$73.048 \pm 0.795 \pm 3.951$	3.567	0.469	0.481	1.549	0.185
	$ g $	$1.073 \pm 0.008 \pm 0.021$	0.018	0.005	0.005	0.009	0.003
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-130.856 \pm 0.457 \pm 1.786$	1.679	0.282	0.274	0.435	0.155
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0 [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$	\mathcal{F}	$2.347 \pm 0.089 \pm 0.557$	0.483	0.079	0.148	0.206	0.076
	$f_{\pi\pi}$	$0.261 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.024$	0.022	0.004	0.006	0.007	0.003
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-149.023 \pm 0.943 \pm 2.696$	2.275	0.540	1.176	0.617	0.196
β_1	$ g $	$0.305 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.046$	0.040	0.010	0.013	0.013	0.007
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$65.554 \pm 1.534 \pm 4.004$	3.017	0.857	2.322	0.771	0.455
$[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0} [\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}$	\mathcal{F}	$22.044 \pm 0.282 \pm 4.137$	3.631	0.268	0.213	1.945	0.188
	$\alpha_{3/2}$	$0.870 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.030$	0.029	0.005	0.003	0.004	0.002
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-149.187 \pm 0.712 \pm 3.503$	3.467	0.350	0.250	0.194	0.157
$\alpha_{K\eta'}$	$ g $	$2.614 \pm 0.141 \pm 0.281$	0.263	0.063	0.041	0.062	0.018
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-19.073 \pm 2.414 \pm 11.979$	11.775	1.507	1.151	0.816	0.755
β_1	$ g $	$0.554 \pm 0.009 \pm 0.053$	0.019	0.005	0.004	0.050	0.002
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$35.310 \pm 0.662 \pm 1.627$	0.969	0.439	0.588	1.069	0.168
$f_{\pi\pi}$	$ g $	$0.082 \pm 0.001 \pm 0.008$	0.004	0.001	0.001	0.007	0.000
	$arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-146.991 \pm 0.718 \pm 2.248$	1.849	0.463	0.593	1.003	0.252

Table 3: Systematic uncertainties on the RS decay coupling parameters, fit fractions and masses and widths of resonances for cascade topology decay chains.

			I	II	III	IV	V
$a_1(1260)^+K^-$	\mathcal{F}	$38.073 \pm 0.245 \pm 2.594$	2.198	0.155	0.171	1.356	0.053
	$ g $	$0.813 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.025$	0.002	0.003	0.004	0.024	0.001
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-149.155 \pm 0.453 \pm 3.132$	2.628	0.321	0.531	1.579	0.162
$\rho(770)^0\pi^+$ $[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}\pi^+$	\mathcal{F}	$89.745 \pm 0.452 \pm 1.498$	1.116	0.298	0.596	0.720	0.192
	\mathcal{F}	$2.420 \pm 0.060 \pm 0.202$	0.165	0.043	0.037	0.102	0.010
	$ g $	$0.991 \pm 0.018 \pm 0.037$	0.005	0.015	0.012	0.031	0.006
β_1	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-22.185 \pm 1.044 \pm 1.195$	0.769	0.597	0.393	0.545	0.169
	$ g $	$0.291 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.017$	0.012	0.006	0.003	0.010	0.001
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$165.819 \pm 1.325 \pm 3.076$	2.155	0.802	0.819	1.845	0.318
$f_{\pi\pi}$	$ g $	$0.117 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.007$	0.001	0.002	0.002	0.007	0.001
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$170.501 \pm 1.235 \pm 2.243$	0.151	0.765	0.960	1.722	0.731
	\mathcal{F}	$0.850 \pm 0.032 \pm 0.077$	0.058	0.021	0.023	0.040	0.007
$[\rho(770)^0\pi^+]^{L=2}$	$ g $	$0.582 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.027$	0.020	0.007	0.008	0.015	0.002
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-152.829 \pm 1.195 \pm 2.512$	1.691	0.710	0.755	1.520	0.258
	m_0 [MeV/c ²]	$1195.050 \pm 1.045 \pm 6.333$	3.187	0.784	0.497	5.371	0.493
$a_1(1260)^+$	Γ_0 [MeV/c ²]	$422.013 \pm 2.096 \pm 12.723$	2.638	1.335	0.723	12.341	0.549
	\mathcal{F}	$4.664 \pm 0.053 \pm 0.624$	0.485	0.037	0.285	0.268	0.012
	$ g $	$0.362 \pm 0.004 \pm 0.015$	0.013	0.002	0.002	0.008	0.001
$K_1(1270)^-\pi^+$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$114.207 \pm 0.760 \pm 3.612$	3.320	0.526	0.441	1.227	0.219
	\mathcal{F}	$96.301 \pm 1.644 \pm 8.237$	5.523	1.082	5.624	2.110	0.286
	$ g $	$2.016 \pm 0.026 \pm 0.211$	0.108	0.017	0.172	0.053	0.007
$\rho(770)^0K^-$ $\rho(1450)^0K^-$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-119.504 \pm 0.856 \pm 2.333$	1.597	0.489	1.102	1.190	0.146
	\mathcal{F}	$27.082 \pm 0.639 \pm 4.039$	2.943	0.410	2.525	1.046	0.097
	$ g $	$0.388 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.033$	0.025	0.004	0.017	0.011	0.001
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-172.577 \pm 1.087 \pm 5.957$	5.653	0.712	1.482	0.876	0.255
	\mathcal{F}	$22.899 \pm 0.722 \pm 3.091$	2.483	0.457	1.490	0.973	0.119
	$ g $	$0.554 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.037$	0.033	0.007	0.005	0.015	0.001
$[K^-\pi^+]^{L=0}\pi^-$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$53.170 \pm 1.068 \pm 1.920$	1.564	0.659	0.401	0.735	0.323
	\mathcal{F}	$3.465 \pm 0.168 \pm 0.469$	0.362	0.117	0.204	0.176	0.043
	$ g $	$0.769 \pm 0.021 \pm 0.048$	0.035	0.014	0.011	0.027	0.004
$[\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-]^{L=2}$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-19.286 \pm 1.616 \pm 6.657$	6.463	1.013	0.914	0.800	0.207
	\mathcal{F}	$1.649 \pm 0.109 \pm 0.228$	0.161	0.083	0.120	0.069	0.007
	$ g $	$0.146 \pm 0.005 \pm 0.009$	0.006	0.004	0.002	0.004	0.000
$\omega(782)[\pi^+\pi^-]K^-$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$9.041 \pm 2.114 \pm 5.673$	5.401	1.402	0.587	0.826	0.126
	m_0 [MeV/c ²]	$1289.810 \pm 0.558 \pm 1.656$	1.197	0.436	0.244	1.010	0.198
	Γ_0 [MeV/c ²]	$116.114 \pm 1.649 \pm 2.963$	1.289	1.221	0.981	2.090	0.545
$K_1(1270)^-$	\mathcal{F}	$1.147 \pm 0.038 \pm 0.205$	0.079	0.022	0.181	0.049	0.003
	$ g $	$0.127 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.011$	0.002	0.001	0.010	0.005	0.000
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-169.822 \pm 1.102 \pm 5.879$	2.052	0.687	5.343	1.124	0.270
$K_1(1400)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-]\pi^+$	\mathcal{F}	$0.458 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.041$	0.031	0.007	0.010	0.024	0.001
	$ g $	$0.302 \pm 0.004 \pm 0.011$	0.005	0.002	0.003	0.009	0.000
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-77.690 \pm 0.732 \pm 2.051$	0.898	0.409	1.174	1.360	0.051
$K_2^*(1430)^- [\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-]\pi^+$	\mathcal{F}	$3.749 \pm 0.095 \pm 0.803$	0.717	0.066	0.076	0.341	0.064
	$ g $	$0.122 \pm 0.002 \pm 0.012$	0.002	0.001	0.002	0.012	0.001
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$172.675 \pm 2.227 \pm 8.208$	6.826	2.235	2.413	2.619	1.761
$K(1460)^-\pi^+$	\mathcal{F}	$51.387 \pm 0.996 \pm 9.581$	9.490	0.529	0.629	0.974	0.333
	\mathcal{F}	$31.228 \pm 0.833 \pm 11.085$	11.021	0.454	0.414	0.989	0.247
	$ g $	$1.819 \pm 0.059 \pm 0.189$	0.180	0.027	0.030	0.036	0.025
$\bar{K}^*(892)^0\pi^-$ $[\pi^+\pi^-]^{L=0}K^-$	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-80.790 \pm 2.225 \pm 6.563$	5.820	1.617	1.740	1.361	1.305
	$ g $	$0.813 \pm 0.032 \pm 0.136$	0.132	0.016	0.018	0.018	0.015
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$112.871 \pm 2.555 \pm 9.487$	8.636	2.025	2.241	1.817	1.730
β_1	$ g $	$0.315 \pm 0.010 \pm 0.022$	0.019	0.005	0.005	0.009	0.002
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$46.734 \pm 1.946 \pm 2.952$	1.110	1.576	1.416	1.121	1.318
	m_0 [MeV/c ²]	$1482.400 \pm 3.576 \pm 15.216$	13.873	3.466	3.216	3.611	1.916
$K(1460)^-$	Γ_0 [MeV/c ²]	$335.595 \pm 6.196 \pm 8.651$	1.524	4.234	2.017	5.901	3.962

Table 4: Systematic uncertainties on the WS decay coupling parameters and fit fractions.

			II	III	IV	V	VI	VII
$K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0$	$ g $	$0.205 \pm 0.019 \pm 0.010$	0.002	0.006	0.003	0.001	0.005	0.006
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-8.502 \pm 4.662 \pm 4.439$	0.433	1.272	0.112	0.148	4.150	0.799
	\mathcal{F}	$9.617 \pm 1.584 \pm 1.028$	0.134	0.436	0.344	0.069	0.567	0.637
$[K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=1}$	$ g $	$0.390 \pm 0.029 \pm 0.006$	0.002	0.003	0.000	0.001	0.004	0.003
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-91.359 \pm 4.728 \pm 4.132$	0.406	0.827	0.128	0.101	3.951	0.766
	\mathcal{F}	$8.424 \pm 0.827 \pm 0.573$	0.069	0.091	0.210	0.020	0.458	0.249
$[K^*(892)^0\rho(770)^0]^{L=2}$	\mathcal{F}	$10.191 \pm 1.028 \pm 0.789$	0.089	0.130	0.255	0.018	0.658	0.314
	$ g $	$0.541 \pm 0.042 \pm 0.055$	0.004	0.043	0.018	0.001	0.024	0.016
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-21.798 \pm 6.536 \pm 5.483$	0.573	4.532	0.547	0.254	0.254	2.960
$\rho(1450)^0K^*(892)^0$	\mathcal{F}	$8.162 \pm 1.242 \pm 1.686$	0.107	1.381	0.474	0.031	0.718	0.428
	$ g $	$0.653 \pm 0.040 \pm 0.058$	0.004	0.017	0.009	0.001	0.049	0.024
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$-110.715 \pm 5.054 \pm 4.854$	0.481	1.484	0.219	0.056	4.236	1.770
$K_1(1270)^+\pi^-$	\mathcal{F}	$18.147 \pm 1.114 \pm 2.301$	0.104	0.800	0.423	0.021	1.788	1.125
	$ g $	$0.560 \pm 0.037 \pm 0.031$	0.003	0.020	0.011	0.001	0.018	0.010
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$29.769 \pm 4.220 \pm 4.565$	0.396	4.055	0.211	0.060	1.638	1.227
$K_1(1400)^+[K^*(892)^0\pi^+]\pi^-$	\mathcal{F}	$26.549 \pm 1.973 \pm 2.128$	0.190	1.715	0.469	0.046	0.940	0.667
	$ g $	$20.901 \pm 1.295 \pm 1.500$	0.129	0.328	0.565	0.134	1.246	0.486
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$0.686 \pm 0.043 \pm 0.022$	0.004	0.007	0.002	0.002	0.019	0.007
$\alpha_{3/2}$	$ g $	$-149.399 \pm 4.260 \pm 2.946$	0.502	0.277	0.181	0.082	2.809	0.651
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$0.438 \pm 0.044 \pm 0.030$	0.004	0.006	0.010	0.001	0.026	0.010
β_1	$ g $	$-132.424 \pm 6.507 \pm 2.972$	0.618	1.109	0.357	0.200	2.382	1.174
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$	$0.050 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.005$	0.001	0.001	0.001	0.000	0.004	0.002
$f_{\pi\pi}$	$ g $	$74.821 \pm 7.528 \pm 5.282$	0.695	0.745	0.149	0.472	5.050	1.058
	$\arg(g)[^\circ]$							

Bibliography

2962

- [1] G. D. Rochester and C. C. Butler, *Evidence for the existence of new unstable elementary particles*, Nature **160** (1947) 855.
- [2] H. Yukawa, *On the interaction of elementary particles I*, Proc. Phys. Math. Soc. Jap. **17** (1935) 48, [Prog. Theor. Phys. Suppl.1,1(1935)].
- [3] C. M. G. Lattes, H. Muirhead, G. P. S. Occhialini, and C. F. Powell, *Processes involving charged mesons*, Nature **159** (1947) 694.
- [4] T. D. Lee and C. N. Yang, *Question of parity conservation in weak interactions*, Phys. Rev. **104** (1956) 254.
- [5] C. S. Wu *et al.*, *Experimental test of parity conservation in Beta decay*, Physical Review **105** (1957) 1413.
- [6] M. Gell-Mann, *The Eightfold Way: A theory of strong interaction symmetry*, .
- [7] G. Zweig, *An SU(3) model for strong interaction symmetry and its breaking*, Tech. Rep. CERN-TH-401, CERN, Geneva, Jan, 1964.
- [8] Belle collaboration, S. K. Choi *et al.*, *Observation of a narrow charmonium - like state in exclusive $B^\pm \rightarrow K^\pm \pi^+ \pi^- J/\psi$ decays*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **91** (2003) 262001, arXiv:hep-ex/0309032.
- [9] LHCb, R. Aaij *et al.*, *Observation of $J/\psi p$ resonances consistent with pentaquark states in $\Lambda_b^0 \rightarrow J/\psi K^- p$ decays*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **115** (2015) 072001, arXiv:1507.03414.
- [10] S. L. Glashow, J. Iliopoulos, and L. Maiani, *Weak interactions with lepton-hadron symmetry*, Phys. Rev. D **2** (1970) 1285.
- [11] J. J. Aubert *et al.*, *Experimental observation of a heavy particle J* , Phys. Rev. Lett. **33** (1974) 1404.

- 2986 [12] J. E. Augustin *et al.*, *Discovery of a narrow resonance in e^+e^- annihilation*,
2987 Phys. Rev. Lett. **33** (1974) 1406.
- 2988 [13] J. H. Christenson, J. W. Cronin, V. L. Fitch, and R. Turlay, *Evidence for the*
2989 *2π decay of the K_2^0 Meson*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **13** (1964) 138.
- 2990 [14] M. Kobayashi and T. Maskawa, *CP violation in the renormalizable theory of*
2991 *weak interaction*, Prog. Theor. Phys. **49** (1973) 652.
- 2992 [15] N. Cabibbo, *Unitary symmetry and nonleptonic decays*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **12**
2993 (1964) 62.
- 2994 [16] S. W. Herb *et al.*, *Observation of a dimuon resonance at 9.5-GeV in 400-GeV*
2995 *proton-nucleus collisions*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **39** (1977) 252.
- 2996 [17] S. Abachi *et al.*, *Search for high mass top quark production in pp collisions at s*
2997 *$= 1.8$ TeV*, Physical Review Letters **74** (1995) 2422, [arXiv:hep-ex/9411001](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ex/9411001).
- 2998 [18] F. Abe *et al.*, *Observation of Top Quark Production in p p Collisions with*
2999 *the Collider Detector at Fermilab*, Physical Review Letters **74** (1995) 2626,
3000 [arXiv:hep-ex/9503002](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ex/9503002).
- 3001 [19] J. Schwinger, *The theory of quantized fields. I*, Phys. Rev. **82** (1951) 914.
- 3002 [20] A. D. Sakharov, *Violation of CP invariance, C-asymmetry, and baryon*
3003 *asymmetry of the universe*, Soviet Physics Uspekhi **34** (1991), no. 5 392.
- 3004 [21] G. 't Hooft, *Symmetry breaking through Bell-Jackiw anomalies*, Phys. Rev.
3005 Lett. **37** (1976) 8.
- 3006 [22] CKMfitter group, J. Charles *et al.*, *CP violation and the CKM matrix: Assessing*
3007 *the impact of the asymmetric B factories*, Eur. Phys. J. **C41** (2005), no. 1 1,
3008 [arXiv:hep-ph/0406184](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0406184), updated results and plots available at.
- 3009 [23] Heavy Flavor Averaging Group, Y. Amhis *et al.*, *Averages of b-hadron, c-hadron,*
3010 *and τ -lepton properties as of summer 2014*, [arXiv:1412.7515](https://arxiv.org/abs/1412.7515), updated results
3011 and plots available at <http://www.slac.stanford.edu/xorg/hfag/>.
- 3012 [24] Belle, BaBar collaborations, A. J. Bevan *et al.*, *The physics of the B factories*,
3013 Eur. Phys. J. **C74** (2014) 3026, [arXiv:1406.6311](https://arxiv.org/abs/1406.6311).
- 3014 [25] BaBar collaboration, B. Aubert *et al.*, *Measurement of time-dependent*
3015 *CP asymmetry in $B^0 \rightarrow c\bar{c}K^{*0}$ decays*, Phys. Rev. **D79** (2009) 072009,
3016 [arXiv:0902.1708](https://arxiv.org/abs/0902.1708).

- 3017 [26] I. Adachi *et al.*, *Precise measurement of the CP violation parameter $\sin(2\phi_1)$*
3018 *in $B^0 \rightarrow c\bar{c}K^0$ decays*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **108** (2012) 171802, arXiv:1201.4643.
- 3019 [27] LHCb collaboration, R. Aaij *et al.*, *Measurement of CP violation in $B^0 \rightarrow$*
3020 *$J/\psi K_s^0$ decays*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **115** (2015), no. 3 031601, arXiv:1503.07089.
- 3021 [28] LHCb collaboration, R. Aaij *et al.*, *Measurement of the CKM angle γ from a*
3022 *combination of LHCb results*, JHEP **12** (2016) 087, arXiv:1611.03076.
- 3023 [29] BaBar collaboration, J. P. Lees *et al.*, *Observation of direct CP violation in*
3024 *the measurement of the Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa angle γ with $B^\pm \rightarrow$*
3025 *$D^{(*)}K^{(*)\pm}$ decays*, Phys. Rev. **D87** (2013), no. 5 052015, arXiv:1301.1029.
- 3026 [30] LHCb collaboration, *Update of the LHCb combination of the CKM angle γ*
3027 *using $B \rightarrow DK$ decays*, Tech. Rep. LHCb-CONF-2017-004, CERN, 2017.
- 3028 [31] M. Gronau and D. Wyler, *On determining a weak phase from charged B decay*
3029 *asymmetries*, Phys. Lett. B **265** (1991) 172 .
- 3030 [32] D. Atwood, I. Dunietz, and A. Soni, *Enhanced CP violation with $B \rightarrow KD^0(\bar{D}^0)$*
3031 *modes and extraction of the CKM angle γ* , Phys. Rev. Lett. **78** (1997) 3257,
3032 arXiv:hep-ph/9612433.
- 3033 [33] D. Atwood and A. Soni, *Role of a charm factory in extracting CKM-phase*
3034 *information via $B \rightarrow DK$* , Phys. Rev. D **68** (2003) 033003.
- 3035 [34] Particle Data Group, K. A. Olive *et al.*, *Review of particle physics*, Chin. Phys.
3036 **C38** (2014) 090001.
- 3037 [35] S. Godfrey and N. Isgur, *Mesons in a relativized quark model with chromody-*
3038 *namics*, Phys. Rev. **D32** (1985) 189.
- 3039 [36] M. Suzuki, *Strange axial-vector mesons*, Phys. Rev. **D47** (1993) 1252.
- 3040 [37] ACCMOR collaboration, C. Daum *et al.*, *Diffraction Production of 3π States*
3041 *at 63 GeV and 94 GeV*, Nucl. Phys. **B182** (1981) 269.
- 3042 [38] G. W. Brandenburg *et al.*, *Evidence for a new strangeness-one pseudoscalar*
3043 *meson*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **36** (1976) 1239.
- 3044 [39] ACCMOR collaboration, C. Daum *et al.*, *Diffraction production of strange*
3045 *mesons at 63 GeV*, Nucl. Phys. **B187** (1981) 1.

- 3046 [40] CLEO collaboration, N. Lowrey *et al.*, *Determination of the $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^0$ and*
3047 *$D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ Coherence Factors and Average Strong-Phase Differences*
3048 *Using Quantum-Correlated Measurements*, Phys. Rev. **D80** (2009) 031105,
3049 [arXiv:0903.4853](#).
- 3050 [41] J. Libby *et al.*, *New determination of the $D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^0$ and $D^0 \rightarrow$*
3051 *$K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ coherence factors and average strong-phase differences*, Phys. Lett.
3052 **B731** (2014) 197, [arXiv:1401.1904](#).
- 3053 [42] LHCb collaboration, R. Aaij *et al.*, *First observation of D^0 oscillations*
3054 *in $D^0 \rightarrow K^+ \pi^- \pi^- \pi^+$ decays and measurement of the associated coherence*
3055 *parameters*, [arXiv:1602.07224](#).
- 3056 [43] T. Evans *et al.*, *Improved determination of the $D \rightarrow K^- \pi^+ \pi^+ \pi^-$ co-*
3057 *herence factor and associated hadronic parameters from a combination of*
3058 *$e^+ e^- \rightarrow \psi(3770) \rightarrow c\bar{c}$ and $pp \rightarrow c\bar{c}X$ data*, Phys. Lett. **B757** (2016) 520,
3059 [arXiv:1602.07430](#), [Erratum: Phys. Lett. **B765** (2017) 402].
- 3060 [44] Heavy Flavor Averaging Group (HFAG), Y. Amhis *et al.*, *Averages of b -hadron,*
3061 *c -hadron, and τ -lepton properties as of summer 2014*, [arXiv:1412.7515](#).
- 3062 [45] CLEO collaboration, J. Libby *et al.*, *Model-independent determination of the*
3063 *strong-phase difference between D^0 and $\bar{D}^0 \rightarrow K_{S,L}^0 h^+ h^-$ ($h = \pi, K$) and its*
3064 *impact on the measurement of the CKM angle γ/ϕ_3* , Phys. Rev. **D82** (2010)
3065 112006, [arXiv:1010.2817](#).
- 3066 [46] BaBar collaboration, B. Aubert *et al.*, *Improved measurement of the CKM*
3067 *angle γ in $B^\mp \rightarrow D^{(*)} K^{(*)\mp}$ decays with a Dalitz plot analysis of D decays to*
3068 *$K_S^0 \pi^+ \pi^-$ and $K_S^0 K^+ K^-$* , Phys. Rev. **D78** (2008) 034023, [arXiv:0804.2089](#).
- 3069 [47] CLEO collaboration, R. A. Briere *et al.*, *CLEO-c and CESR-c: A new frontier*
3070 *of weak and strong interactions*, Cornell LEPP Report CLNS-01-1742 (2001).
- 3071 [48] CLEO collaboration, D. Besson *et al.*, *Measurement of $\sigma(e^+ e^- \rightarrow \psi(3770) \rightarrow$*
3072 *hadrons) at $E_{c.m.} = 3773$ MeV*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **96** (2006) 092002,
3073 [arXiv:1004.1358](#), [Erratum: Phys. Rev. Lett.104,159901(2010)].
- 3074 [49] D. J. Lange, *The EvtGen particle decay simulation package*, Nucl. Instrum.
3075 Meth. **A462** (2001) 152.
- 3076 [50] R. Brun *et al.*, *GEANT 3.21, CERN program library long writeup W5013,*
3077 *unpublished*.

- 3078 [51] CLEO collaboration, G. Bonvicini *et al.*, *Updated measurements of absolute D^+*
3079 *and D^0 hadronic branching fractions and $\sigma(e^+e^- \rightarrow D\bar{D})$ at $E_{\text{cm}} = 3774$ MeV,*
3080 *Phys. Rev. **D89** (2014), no. 7 072002, arXiv:1312.6775, [Erratum: Phys.*
3081 *Rev.D91,no.1,019903(2015)].*
- 3082 [52] M. Nayak *et al.*, *First determination of the CP content of $D \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$ and*
3083 *$D \rightarrow K^+K^-\pi^0$,* *Phys. Lett. **B740** (2015) 1, arXiv:1410.3964.*
- 3084 [53] CLEO collaboration, S. Dobbs *et al.*, *Measurement of absolute hadronic*
3085 *branching fractions of D mesons and $e^+e^- \rightarrow D\bar{D}$ cross-sections at the $\psi(3770)$*
3086 *, Phys. Rev. **D76** (2007) 112001, arXiv:0709.3783.*
- 3087 [54] C. Elsasser, *$b\bar{b}$ production at the LHCb experiment, provided by the LHCb*
3088 *Speakers' Bureau, .*
- 3089 [55] LHCb collaboration, R. Aaij *et al.*, *LHCb Detector Performance,* *Int. J. Mod.*
3090 *Phys. **A30** (2015), no. 07 1530022, arXiv:1412.6352.*
- 3091 [56] R. Aaij *et al.*, *Performance of the LHCb Vertex Locator,* *JINST **9** (2014) 09007,*
3092 *arXiv:1405.7808.*
- 3093 [57] P. Perret and X. Vilasis-Cardona, *Performance of the LHCb calorimeters*
3094 *during the period 2010-2012,* *J. Phys. : Conf. Ser. **587** (2014) 012012. 6 p, see*
3095 *LHCb-TALK-2014-236.*
- 3096 [58] R. Aaij *et al.*, *The LHCb trigger and its performance in 2011,* *JINST **8** (2013)*
3097 *P04022, arXiv:1211.3055.*
- 3098 [59] V. V. Gligorov and M. Williams, *Efficient, reliable and fast high-level triggering*
3099 *using a bonsai boosted decision tree,* *JINST **8** (2013) P02013, arXiv:1210.6861.*
- 3100 [60] I. Bird, *Computing for the large hadron collider,* *Annual Re-*
3101 *view of Nuclear and Particle Science **61** (2011), no. 1 99,*
3102 *arXiv:https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-nucl-102010-130059.*
- 3103 [61] T. Sjöstrand, S. Mrenna, and P. Skands, *PYTHIA 6.4 physics and manual,*
3104 *JHEP **05** (2006) 026, arXiv:hep-ph/0603175.*
- 3105 [62] T. Sjöstrand, S. Mrenna, and P. Skands, *A brief introduction to PYTHIA 8.1,*
3106 *Comput. Phys. Commun. **178** (2008) 852, arXiv:0710.3820.*
- 3107 [63] Geant4 collaboration, S. Agostinelli *et al.*, *Geant4: A simulation toolkit,* *Nucl.*
3108 *Instrum. Meth. **A506** (2003) 250.*

- 3109 [64] Geant4 collaboration, J. Allison *et al.*, *Geant4 developments and applications*,
3110 IEEE Trans. Nucl. Sci. **53** (2006) 270.
- 3111 [65] L. Breiman, J. H. Friedman, R. A. Olshen, and C. J. Stone, *Classification and*
3112 *regression trees*, Wadsworth international group, Belmont, California, USA,
3113 1984.
- 3114 [66] B. P. Roe *et al.*, *Boosted decision trees as an alternative to artificial neural*
3115 *networks for particle identification*, Nucl. Instrum. Meth. **A543** (2005) 577,
3116 arXiv:physics/0408124.
- 3117 [67] W. D. Hulsbergen, *Decay chain fitting with a Kalman filter*, Nucl. Instrum.
3118 Meth. **A552** (2005) 566, arXiv:physics/0503191.
- 3119 [68] BaBar collaboration, P. del Amo Sanchez *et al.*, *Study of $B \rightarrow X\gamma$ decays and*
3120 *determination of $|V_{td}/V_{ts}|$* , Phys. Rev. **D82** (2010) 051101, arXiv:1005.4087.
- 3121 [69] L. Anderlini *et al.*, *The PIDCalib package*, Tech. Rep. LHCb-PUB-2016-021.
3122 CERN-LHCb-PUB-2016-021, CERN, Geneva, Jul, 2016.
- 3123 [70] J. Blatt and V. Weisskopf, *Theoretical nuclear physics*, Springer-Verlag New
3124 York (1979).
- 3125 [71] S. U. Chung *et al.*, *Partial wave analysis in K-matrix formalism*, Annalen Phys.
3126 **4** (1995) 404.
- 3127 [72] S. M. Flatte, *Coupled-Channel Analysis of the $\pi\eta$ and $K\bar{K}$ Systems Near $K\bar{K}$*
3128 *Threshold*, Phys. Lett. **B63** (1976) 224.
- 3129 [73] V. V. Anisovich and A. V. Sarantsev, *K-matrix analysis of the $(IJ^{PC} = 00^{++})$ -*
3130 *wave in the mass region below 1900 MeV*, Eur. Phys. J. **A16** (2003) 229,
3131 arXiv:hep-ph/0204328.
- 3132 [74] S. Weinberg, *Pion scattering lengths*, Physical Review Letters **17** (1966) 616.
- 3133 [75] FOCUS collaboration, J. M. Link *et al.*, *Dalitz plot analysis of the $D^+ \rightarrow$*
3134 *$K^-\pi^+\pi^+$ decay in the FOCUS experiment*, Phys. Lett. **B653** (2007) 1,
3135 arXiv:0705.2248.
- 3136 [76] K. M. Watson, *The effect of final state interactions on reaction cross sections*,
3137 Phys. Rev. **88** (1952) 1163.

- 3138 [77] B. S. Zou and D. V. Bugg, *Covariant tensor formalism for partial wave analyses*
3139 *of ψ decay to mesons*, Eur. Phys. J. **A16** (2003) 537, arXiv:hep-ph/0211457.
- 3140 [78] Mark III collaboration, D. Coffman *et al.*, *Resonant substructure in $\bar{K}\pi\pi$*
3141 *decays of D mesons*, Phys. Rev. **D45** (1992) 2196.
- 3142 [79] CLEO collaboration, M. Artuso *et al.*, *Amplitude analysis of $D^0 \rightarrow$*
3143 *$K^+K^-\pi^+\pi^-$* , Phys. Rev. **D85** (2012) 122002, arXiv:1201.5716.
- 3144 [80] M. Nauenberg and A. Pais, *Woolly cusps*, Phys. Rev. **126** (1962) 360.
- 3145 [81] CLEO collaboration, D. M. Asner *et al.*, *Hadronic structure in the decay*
3146 *$\tau^- \rightarrow \nu_\tau\pi^-\pi^0\pi^0$ and the sign of the tau neutrino helicity*, Phys. Rev. **D61**
3147 (1999) 012002.
- 3148 [82] E791 collaboration, B. Meadows *et al.*, *Measurement of the $K^-\pi^+$ S-wave*
3149 *system in $D^+ \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+$ decays from Fermilab E791*, AIP Conf. Proc. **814**
3150 (2006) 675, arXiv:hep-ex/0510045.
- 3151 [83] E791 collaboration, E. M. Aitala *et al.*, *Model independent measurement of*
3152 *S-wave $K^-\pi^+$ systems using $D^+ \rightarrow K\pi\pi$ decays from Fermilab E791*, Phys.
3153 Rev. **D73** (2006) 032004, arXiv:hep-ex/0507099, [Erratum: Phys. Rev. **D74**
3154 (2006) 059901].
- 3155 [84] P. d'Argent *et al.*, *Amplitude analyses of $D^0 \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-\pi^+\pi^-$ and*
3156 *$D^0 \rightarrow K^+K^-\pi^+\pi^-$ decays*, JHEP **05** (2017) 143, arXiv:1703.08505.
- 3157 [85] BES III collaboration, M. Ablikim *et al.*, *Amplitude analysis of*
3158 *$D^0 \rightarrow K^-\pi^+\pi^+\pi^-$* , Phys. Rev. **D95** (2017) 072010, arXiv:1701.08591.
- 3159 [86] FOCUS collaboration, J. M. Link *et al.*, *Study of the $D^0 \rightarrow \pi^-\pi^+\pi^-\pi^+$ decay*,
3160 Phys. Rev. D **75** (2007) 052003.
- 3161 [87] Particle Data Group, J. Beringer *et al.*, *Review of particle physics*, Phys. Rev.
3162 **D86** (2012) 010001, and 2013 partial update for the 2014 edition.
- 3163 [88] I. I. Bigi, *Charm physics: Like Botticelli in the Sistine chapel*, in *KAON2001:*
3164 *International Conference on CP Violation Pisa, Italy, June 12-17, 2001.*
3165 arXiv:hep-ph/0107102.
- 3166 [89] D. Atwood and A. Soni, *Role of charm factory in extracting CKM phase infor-*
3167 *mation via $B \rightarrow DK$* , Phys. Rev. **D68** (2003) 033003, arXiv:hep-ph/0304085.